



My Second Life (Original Version) by [Coal Buck](#)

Formatted into Google Documents by [Extantdread](#) with permission.

**Disclaimer: EXTANTDREAD (THE MANAGER OF THIS DOCUMENT)
IS NOT THE AUTHOR**

Notes: Chapter 180 is the last chapter. I have formatted this into Google Docs to the best of my ability. This was taken from a .txt file. You do not have the ability to bold or italicize text in those types of files. I do not specifically remember where or how those effects were used, as I am only human. For that, I apologize. I will bold the chapter titles and my small amount of notes so they are somewhat easier to find along with the huge amount of text.

Table of Contents:

Click “View”, then “Document Outline”. Hurrah for Google automacy.
On mobile, Document Outline is under the more symbol (...)

Important Dead Links:

[The rewrite \(GDocs\)](#) Deleted. It was written and managed by Coal.

[DuNamarSundavar's Version \(Fanfiction.net\)](#) Deleted.

[Fimfiction Fan Club Group](#) Deleted as well. This one irks me, lots of discussion was posted on there :\

Chapter Links:

[Chapters 31-60 \(GDocs\)](#)

[Chapters 61-90 \(GDocs\)](#)

[Chapters 91-120 \(GDocs\)](#)

[Chapters 121-150 \(GDocs\)](#)

[Chapters 151-180 \(GDocs\)](#)

Fanart:

[My Second Life: Sasha](#)

[My Second Life: Copper](#)

[Big Mac Destroys Coal](#)

[My Second Life](#)

Downloads:

[Full story \(.docx/Word file\)](#)

[Full story \(.txt file\)](#)

[Chapters 1-10 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 11-20 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 21-30 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 31-40 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 41-50 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 51-60 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 61-70 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 71-80 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 81-90 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 91-100 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 101-110 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 111-120 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 121-130 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 131-140 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 141-150 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 151-160 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 161-170 \(Word\)](#)

[Chapters 171-180 \(Word\)](#)

.PDF / Other Formats: Click on the “File” button in the top left corner. Hover over “Download as” and then click PDF Document / Other desired format.

Fun Facts:

- This story is ~630,000 words long. It was one of the longest MLP Fanfics during its reign (Fallout: Equestria - Project Horizons has ~1.8 million).
- This is 2124 pages long (12 pt. TNR).
- At one point making this document, Microsoft Word broke and got an error message saying that there were too many grammar/spelling errors and that it couldn't display them all.
- MSL started in the fall of 2011, and was abandoned in late spring 2012.
- As of May 4th, 2018, this story has not been updated for over six years.

Spot a formatting error or broken link? Have suggestions? Or just a general question? Message me ([Extantdread](#)) on Fimfiction.

Please, do not message me asking for more, a sequel, or anything like that. I'm not the writer. Coal Buck was, and I don't have the time or skill to continue it.

Chapter 1: Introduction

Author's notes: Thanks for giving this monster of a story a try! I'm sure all of you know by the tags that this is going to have 'mature' content, so be ready for that! I don't much care for the intro, but it's necessary to introduce the mindset of the character I'm trying to portray. I hope everyone has a lot of fun with this, or at least it manages to kill some time!

* * * *

I am a not-so-typical college student, but I consider myself to be normal in plenty of ways. I go to school, I go to work, and I love my family. That is where my normalcy ends. I am a hardcore brony. When I say hardcore, I do mean hard-fucking-core. Every moment I live where I do not have to focus on some kind of work, I am thinking of ponies. I would dare say that most bronies merely love the show and the characters and leave it at that. They go about their normal lives and simply enjoy their bronyism as a hobby. This is not the case with me. Every day, I fantasize about living in Equestria with the six ponies who have grabbed (can they do that? I mean hooves and all...) my heart and refuse to let go. So with that in mind, let us start the show.

* * * *

Six a.m. rolls around and my alarm goes off. I jump out of bed and stop the alarm before the third beep. "Why do alarm clocks have to be so damn obnoxious!?" I swear under my breath. "Auuuugh! I really need to stop doing this! I don't have to work until 3:00 p.m. today! Why do I keep getting up so early!?"

I slide into my computer chair, getting comfortable, before turning on the monitor. Once the flash is over and my sight returns to me, the silhouette of Rainbow Dash as my desktop background graces my eyes. "Oh yeah, that's why."

The next several hours pass with my reading of fanfiction and checking Equestria Daily and My Little Brony Meme Base for new material. Currently, my desire for anything and everything pony is what solely gives me joy in life. You see, I have always been a bit introverted. I have had people I would call "buddies" in the past, but we were only close due to circumstance. We were friends because we went to the same school or worked the same job, but once life took over, each friendship would end without a single word being spoken about it. Those friendships simply ended as if they had never existed in the first place.

Also, due to an early exposure of "adult" material in my youth, I grew up simply being bored of the physical appearance of women. From the age of seven, I knew all about porn and had very easy access to the stuff. By fifteen, I had already seen the most attractive women this world had to offer. Therefore, I no longer desire the companionship of women based only upon their appearance. I tend to have a lot of trust issues with women as well. Even I can't say why, but I could never allow myself to love women in a romantic way.

To summarize: I have no friends, no lover, and basically no life, some would say. I wish I could say that it doesn't bother me, but there are days when it feels like the weight of the world rests solely upon my shoulders — if only because I don't have a soul in the world to hold it up with me.

* * * *

“Shit!” I cursed, looking at the time. “It is already 2:16 p.m. I guess I better get ready for work....” I spent the next few minutes putting on my work attire and gathering the items I need to get through the day.

“At least it is only a seven hour shift today. Now that school is almost out for winter break, I'll be able to relax all day tomorrow. Oh, crap! There is that exam Thursday...once work gets out, I'll only have a day to study. *sigh* Well, at least there is only one more week for that class after then.”

2:45 rolled around and I said goodbye to the desktop image of Rainbow Dash, half-heartedly descending my bedroom stairs as I headed for the front door. My mother stopped me for a hug on the way out. You see, even though I was twenty, I hadn't felt the need to move out yet. I loved my parents and got along fine with them for the most part, so why should I move out just to make life harder than it already was? I wish I could believe that, but the truth was that I merely used my parents for comfort. I used them both financially and emotionally. Living at home was cheaper by a long shot than living on my own, and my parents were the only people in my life who I feel love me regardless of my imperfections.

I made the same trek to work as I had hundreds of times before. I had gotten into the habit of singing 'I'm a bronny now' every time I went to work. If I could keep my mind on the ponies I loved so much, the day would go so much more smoothly. I arrived at work and parked in the same spot I had every other time, sighing as I exited the vehicle.

“Here goes nothing,” I groaned, walking through the sliding doors of the store.

It was "Holiday Madness" time again, and I work retail, so I don't have to tell anyone that it is not a fun time. Thankfully, though, the day was just like any other. There were a few difficult customers, but nobody was irate about anything. Closing time rolled around and I got very impatient waiting for the arrival of my relief. All I wanted was to get home, get a shower, enjoy some more pony, and go to bed. Not necessarily in that order, mind you. My relief finally arrived, and I hurriedly got all of my closing work accomplished and said goodbye to my co-workers. Upon exiting the building, I was hit with the freezing cold air that the colder seasons in the Midwest were known to give. I didn't mind too much, though. It was a nice way to liven up a bit after another dull day of work.

I made my way to my vehicle, already lost in thought over what kind of fanfiction might have come out during my time at work. I hoped there will be some more 'HiE' (Human in Equestria) shipping stories. I would never admit it to anyone, but when I say that I "love" ponies, I'm not kidding. I don't care if they are ponies; they are the kindest, sweetest, most loveable characters I have ever known. It was not difficult in the slightest to find myself attracted to them on a deeper level. At times I do feel bad about it, though. Not because I am ashamed to love them, but because they are so innocent and I feel myself to be an enormous pervert. After the first eight years of my porn-filled youth, I began to discover more and more kinds of porn. I went through a phase of hentai, followed by a phase of furryism. Furryism was the latest discovery, which I had made about four years earlier. I couldn't help but delve into the world of rule 34 even with ponies. I absolutely hated myself every single time for it, because I loved them so very much while there I was, using their likeness to satisfy my unnatural animalistic desires! After a particular session of rule 34 I found myself thinking, "If they were real and I ended up being with one of them, it wouldn't be bestiality because I'm with them...it would be because they are with me."

I pulled out of the lot and made the same turn I had made time and time again to get back home. Even though today had been a fine day by normal standards, I couldn't help but sigh and fight off my depression.

"Today wasn't a bad day! Why do I have to feel this way after every god-damn shift!? Every fucking day, it is the same stupid shit again and again!" I swore, hitting the steering wheel with enough force to make myself lose control of the vehicle slightly. "I don't have a bad life! I don't have a hard life! Yet every single day, I can only wish to be dead or fantasize about being in Equestria. I mean good fucking god! It is a fucking cartoon! It isn't real! I shouldn't take it so seriously, and yet, I do. All I can think about is living there, but what about my family? They would hate me if they knew I wanted so badly to give up my life here for something else. And not just something else, but a fictional world full of colorful ponies! It's like I'm turning my back on not only my family, my world, but even my species! The worst part is... I would do it if I ever got the chance..." My rant trailed off as I lost myself in my own mind. I didn't see the light turn red; nor did I see the truck coming the other way. All I saw was the world turn on its side as I lost myself in darkness.

Chapter 2: Where am I?

Authors note: You came back!? Well good on ya mate! Anyway, I'm just wanting to let you know: Everything in italics are mental quotes (**Extant's notes: Welp. That sucks. Darn. It doesn't show up in the file, so I hope you can do without that.**). I don't use them much in the future, but I didn't feel the need to change it here. Whelp that's all for now! Hope this chapter is more pleasant for ya than the last! Also...I swear a lot. Just a warning for ya!

"Auuugh! SHIT! WHAT THE FUCK HAPPENED!?" I awoke violently screaming. I looked around only to see the most beautiful and colorful forest I had ever seen.

“What is going on!? One minute I’m driving wait...I got hit by a fucking truck...how did...when did...WHAT THE FUCK IS GOING ON!? I swore to nobody particular. “Ok let’s calm down here. Let’s figure out what the situation is. I’m alone, in a forest, with no road, no vehicle, no people, god knows where, and the last thing I remember is being Hit. By. A. Truck...the flying FUCK is going on?” I could only sigh and hold my face in my hands as I fight back panic. This whole situation made no sense! How did I go from driving to waking up here!?”

“Well, I know when you get lost you're supposed to stay where you are, but that was always assuming people knew where to generally look for you. I could be ten minutes away from a town and yet I decide to sit on my ass and wait, or I could get up and start walking...I think walking sounds pretty good.”

I got up off the ground and dusted myself off. I took a few minutes to admire the forest around me before starting my search for civilization. The trees and flowers had a color to them that made them almost look artificial. If it were not for the smell wafting about my nose I may have thought somebody was merely playing a joke on me. Like I had woken up in some sort of stupid reality show.

I take in a deep breath, and let out a long sigh. “Ahhhhhh. I don’t know where I am, but I don’t think I have ever tasted cleaner air. Now I have a choice to make...which way do I flipping go?” I was in the middle of a light patch of trees, but it looked like regardless of the direction I choose the tree line only gets thicker.

“Isn’t there some kind of rule like, if you’re lost and you can’t stay put always head north? Shit I can’t remember...cause ya know...when would I ever need to know how to get out of a FUCKING FOREST!?” At that moment I heard a rustling followed by some muffled sounds. It was then I started to panic even more.

“Ok, maybe it is a person...but what if it isn’t...fuck it...up a tree!” I ran to the nearest tree and forced my way up trying to hide myself the best I can. “If it IS a person I can just climb down, but if it isn’t then I may get lucky and it won’t see me...I really need to stop talking to myself in these fucking situations!”

I sat in the tree for what felt like hours. Every time I thought whatever it was decided to either go back or went around me, I would hear a noise that put the thing even closer to me!

“shit shit shit shit shit shit shit shit shit shit...” was all that was going through my mind as whatever had been making the noises finally emerged.

My heart dropped. Not ten yards away was a cyan pegasus with a rainbow mane. Her left wing was tucked in tightly against her body, but her right wing looked like she had crash landed on it. It was battered and bruised worse than the rest of her. Even though she looked like a wolf attack

victim, I had to admit that she was the most beautiful thing I had ever seen.

“...is that...no it can't be, but it is. I...I don't want to even think it! It isn't possible, but there she is! And she is hurt! Oh my fucking god in heaven Rainbow Dash is fucking hurt and I'm hiding in a tree like a little bitch!!! I have to help her...but what if she is scared of me and takes off? Fuck it!”

“Hel...lo?” Dash managed to get out. “Is some pony there? I was practicing some tricks over the Everfree forest when I lost control and crashed...hard. I'm pretty lost at the moment and I could use some directions, but don't get any weird ideas if you think I'm helpless!”

I couldn't move, I couldn't even breath. Seeing her was one thing, but I could understand her too. I always thought that there would be some kind of a language barrier if god willing something like this ever happened to me. I could hardly contain my enthusiasm, but I had to do or say something!

“Yeah, I'm here...” I finally manage to get out.

“Oh good! I thought that it may have been a mancore or something, and I just bucked up bad! So um...who are you, and more importantly...where are you?”

“Well, my name is Coal and I'm kinda in a tree at the moment, but I don't want to come out just yet.”

“What!? Why not?” Dash says while starting to sound angry.

“Well...the thing of it is...if I come out you're probably going to A: scream and run off, or much more likely B: you're going to take my appearance as a threat and kick my ass.” “I just swore to Rainbow Dash...bronies forgive me!”

“What are you weird looking or something? Listen, I don't know what kind of ponies you've been around, but ponies around here don't care too much what others look like. So will you please come out? You're kinda starting to freak me out...” she chuckles a bit at the end.

I laugh a bit too saying: “Alright I'll come out, but you have to promise me that you won't freak out and run away; or try and hurt me.”

“I promise I promise, now get your flank out here.” Dash says as I catch a smile forming.

Well...that's all I need to hear, so I slowly descend the tree while never taking my eyes off of Dash. I reach the ground before she finally sees me, but she definitely doesn't know what to think.

“Wha...what are you?” she asks as her face easily portrayed her shock.

“The short answer is that I’m a friend, and you look like you have seen better days.” I say that while staring at Dash in awe. God...she is real, and...so amazing.

“Listen you! I don’t buy for one second that something as weird looking as you would be willing to help me just like that!” she yells stomping the ground with her hoof. “Are you some kinda spy!?”

Even though she is yelling at me I can’t help but lose myself in happiness. “Rainbow Dash....THE RAINBOW DASH is right in front of me. I can almost reach out and...better not”

Dash yells out again and breaks me from my mental stupor: “Hey! I’m talking to you! Answer me! What are you, and why would you say you’re my friend?”

“Listen I have a name you know. It is Coal, I already told you that, and I can’t explain it to you while you’re freaking out. You said ponies around here don’t care what you look like. I look different, yes, but I wouldn’t hurt any pony! Just the idea of doing such a thing makes my stomach wrench! So um...what is your name?” “As if I even have to ask...”

“Oh, well it is Rainbow Dash! Fastest flier in all of Equestria!” she exclaimed perking up a bit.

“It is a pleasure to meet you Rainbow Dash (oh fuck yes). You said you crashed practicing some new tricks?”

“Yeah, I was distracted when this huge ball of light lit up the sky last night!”

“Wait...last night? How long have you been in the forest?”

“I fell in last night, and so I had to spend the night in a tree. Trying to climb a tree with my wing in the condition it is in was NOT fun!” Dash laughs at herself a bit. “It is really annoying, you know? I’m minding my own business, and all of a sudden FLASH and I lose control. Well, Fluttershy can’t get mad at me for crashing this time. It was totally not my fault!”

“I guess crashing isn’t all that uncommon for you then (I regret that instantly)?”

“HEY, it isn’t because I’m a bad flier if that is what you are getting at!” Dash said snarling a bit. “I just do the really hard stuff that no pony else is brave enough to do!”

“Calm down Dashie! I wasn’t judging you! I was just trying to figure out the situation better. So um...anyway who is this Fluttershy? Is she your mom or something (pfffft mom)?”

“Ok, first off, don’t call me Dashie! Only my close friends get to call me that. I’m still not sure if I

can trust you yet. Secondly, Fluttershy isn't my mom! She kinda acts like it sometimes, but she is my closest and oldest friend."

"Ok ok I won't call you Dashie again (I miss it already). Anyway um... not that it hasn't been nice meeting you and all, but I think it is way past time we try and get out of this forest. I don't like the look of that wing of yours. It looks really messed up."

"I've had worse, but it isn't fun. Well, I was kinda hoping you were another pony who could help me get out. You're just as lost as I am, aren't you?" Dash asked inquisitively.

"Yeah I am, but if you came this way on a straight path and didn't find a way out; that already eliminates one way we can go."

"Good point...which way should we go now?" Dash looked up at me with those big beautiful maroon eyes. She had so much pride that she would never say how hurt or scared she was, but those eyes couldn't lie to me. I had never wanted to hold someone or some pony so badly in all my life!

"Coal, you're really really starting to weird me out now!" Dash says while backing away a little.

"Oh! I'm sorry Dash! I have just never seen a...creature like you before. I didn't mean to be so rude and stare like that."

"What do you mean? Are there not ponies where you come from?"

"Is that what you are? A pony? (I am so full of shit) Well yes there are ponies where I am from, but they aren't nearly as colorful or smart as you are. Ponies where I'm from are smart for animals I guess, but they can't talk or make rational decisions on a grander scale." Hearing all that made Dash a little more nervous than she already was. She tilted her head back and eyed me up and down.

"That is horrible! What happened to those ponies that made them like that?" she asked while continually looking more than a little taken back.

"Nothing is wrong with them Dash. That is just how they are. There is another thing too. The ponies where I'm from don't have wings. I don't know what you're called here (yes I do), but where I'm from you would be called a Pegasus and those are just myths."

"WHAT!? Just myths? I mean that is what we are called, but...only myths?" Dash says looking hurt. "Do you at least have unicorns?"

"No Dash we don't. Those are myths too. I'll say this right now Dash, I don't think I'm in the same world anymore. That light that made you crash last night was probably whatever brought

me here.” No idea how I’m making that connection, but what the hell else could it be!?

Dash looks at me like I was a monster all over again and says: “Are you trying to tell me that there are other worlds out there, and you’re something from them? That doesn’t make any sense!”

“You’re telling me Dash, but please can you stop yelling? I don’t know what kind of things live in this forest, but I’m not confident that I could protect both of us if we were attacked.”

“What do you mean protect the both of us? I don’t need protection from anything! I’m Rainbow Dash! Fastest flier in all of Equestria! I’m not scared of anything!” she exclaims as she throws her head up high.

“Dash, you are a very brave girl, but you are hurt. I’m sure you could kick the crap out of anything and everything if you were well, but you’re grounded right now. And I’ll be damned if I’m gonna let some beast hurt you!”

Dash just gawked at me. “Why would you do that? I mean I’ve just been yelling and distrusting you since you showed yourself to me. I wouldn’t expect any pony to fight for me in this kind of a situation. Let alone whatever you are.”

“Well Dash first off I’m a human, and secondly I don’t need a reason. You are hurt and you’re the only thing keeping me from going insane with uncertainty and loneliness in a world I’ve never been before! I think that makes you my benefactor. I don’t know if I’m using that word right, but the point is; I will gladly fight for you if I have to!”

Dash just kept gawking for a few more seconds before hanging her head. “That...is so nice of you. I’m sorry I didn’t trust you before, but I do now.” She slowly looks up at me again and I swear I couldn’t love this pony any more if I tried. That apologetic look made her so unbelievably cute I could just explode right there and be happy. A part of me is surprised she would trust me so soon, but damnit I don’t care!

“Don’t give it a second thought Dash. After all, that is what friends are for.”

She smiles while looking away from me a bit. “Thanks Coal, and you can call me Dashie if you want...” Now it was my turn to gawk. Rainbow Dash THE ONE AND ONLY FUCKING RAINBOW DASH just inadvertently said that I am a close friend of hers! “My life is complete!”

“Thanks Dashie...” I say giving her the most sincere smile I have ever given anyone. After a minute she looks back up at me, and gives me a sweet smile of her own. “Come on Dashie! Let’s get out of this forest! I want to get you fixed up so you can show me how fast the fastest flier in Equestria really is!”

She just beams at me before responding. "Yeah, let's get outta here!"

Apparently Dash came up from the south so we both agree to head north (I fucking knew you were supposed to go north). After about two hours of walking Dash was looking very haggard.

"Dashie, are you alright?" I asked with more concern dripping out than I probably should have allowed.

"Yeah, I'm just really sore is all..."

"Hey um if you want...I wouldn't mind carrying you for a while..." She gawked at me again. (she has been doing that a lot)

"I couldn't let you do that, Coal. Besides I'm not that tired."

"Hey I'm not going to force you, Dashie, but if you think I'm offering because I think you're weak or something that is not the case at all. I don't know what your bones are made out of, or what you have been through before; but you are hurt twenty times more than I have ever been! You are a trooper and as a trooper if you want a little break I'll give you a free ride on my back." Either ponies are incredibly easy to manipulate (oh god I hope they aren't) or Dash really did trust me. I won't ever forget what happened next for the rest of my life.

Dash looks up at me with her face as red as a beet and raised her hooves up like how a child would if it wanted to be picked up. (She is sooo fucking cute!!! Aaaaugh my heart!!!!) Not wanting to make her feel more embarrassed than she already was, so I quickly lifted her off the ground and gently slide her onto my back. She cringes just a bit as the friction irritates the bruises on her belly.

"Sorry Dashie! I hope that didn't hurt too badly..."

"No no, I'm fine Coal. Can we just get moving though please? I don't want to have to do this any longer than I have to." Dash throws her head up going wide-eyed as she realized how bad that sounded. "Not that I'm not thankful of course! It is just really uncool, and I take my coolness very seriously!"

Ha! That made me laugh a bit! "Think nothing of it Dashie! I know what you meant. I may not be too comfortable, but why don't you try and get some sleep? Hopefully we'll be out of this forest before you wake up."

Dash gives me a sheepish smile before resting her head on my back (YOU JELLY? I WOULD BE FUCKING JELLY!).

I try to walk as smoothly as I can so as to not disturb Dash sleeping on my back. Consequently

though, I ended up going a lot slower. Now Dash couldn't have weighed more than fifty pounds, but I am about as scrawny as they come. So after another three hours of trekking through the forest floor with fifty or so pounds of pure awesome on my back; I am about ready to collapse! I couldn't stop though, if I stopped moving Dash could wake up and see how much I look like shit right now! Yeah, I know she isn't all that fixed up herself, but I am not going to look like a weak bitch in front of Rainbow Dash!

Finally after another twenty minutes of the most grueling physical activity I have ever done, I break through the tree line into what I'm sure everyone has guessed by now...yup...Fluttershy's property. I don't remember but I think I squealed a bit.

I gently nudge Dash a little to wake her up. I'm sure some of you are like 'Why the hell did you do that jerk? Let her sleep!'

Well I'm still playing the part like I don't know what is going on. So it would be really weird to go up to this cottage and be all "Hey I've got your friend here, Fluttershy! How do I know your name? I watch you when you sleep!" or some stupid shit like that.

Dash slowly wakes up and rubs her eyes (god she is so cute). She realizes where we are and jumps off my back stretching a bit.

"Sleep well, Dash?"

"Yeah I did, thanks! Hey! We made it out of the forest, and that over there is Fluttershy's cottage! You rock, Coal!" (Life is so very very good right now)

"Thanks Dashie! Can this Fluttershy of yours help out with your injuries? If not I don't mind taking you the rest of the way to a doctor or something. Hmmm I would still do it, but that may not be a good idea. You were pretty apprehensive when you first saw me, and I'm fairly certain any other ponies who see me may be a lot of the same."

"Yeah you're right about that Coal, and don't worry. Fluttershy has fixed me up plenty of times! I want you to meet her, but I need to warn you she is incredibly shy. I mean it is almost silly how shy she is. I have no idea how she will react when she sees you."

"If you want I could wait here at the tree line while you get fixed up. You could then tell her about me, and kinda prep her for what she will see. Besides, I've been here awake for over six hours now. I sort of need to take care of some business if you catch my drift."

She turns away blushing a bit. "Oh don't worry about it, Coal. That sounds fine to me. It shouldn't take too long, and then I'll bring her out here to meet you. I'll give a heads up when I do though."

“Thanks Dashie! You are the best!”

She then heads up the short winding path over the little bridge to Fluttershy’s front door. I watch from the shadows as Dash knocks, and Fluttershy jumps out of the doorway moments later. She starts holding Dash while crying. I guess she must have been really worried, because I was a good several dozen yards away and I could still hear Fluttershy sob! It was not doing my heart any good, so I decided the best course of action is to give them their privacy while I search for some of my own.

Chapter 3: Meeting Fluttershy (and creepiness ensues)

After taking care of business (thankfully no taxes needed to be filed) I went back to the tree line and just took a much needed breather. “I wonder how long Dashie will be.” I ask aloud. That was when it finally hit me. “I am in Equestria waiting on Rainbow Dash to be fixed up by Fluttershy, afterwards I’ll be introduced to the latter.” I hadn’t had time to really consider everything that has happened. First I didn’t know where I was; then Dashie shows up and I’m busy trying to make myself not look like a jerk; and then I spent five hours walking; three of them while Dashie was on my back! I probably should have been thinking about all that has happened during that time, but I was just so out of it. I spent the next several minutes thinking about my family, my job, my school, and my life. I thought about Twilight maybe being able to send me back, but I didn’t want to go back. The only thing I had going for me back home were my parents, and I’m sure there would be some way to let them know that I was Ok. It was time I did something for myself. I am going to stay in Equestria till the day I die! I started thinking about whether or not I should see if ponification was an option, but was suddenly brought back to reality when I heard Dashie yell out to me.

“Hey Coal! You can come out now! I’ve given Fluttershy a fair warning!”

I look to the cottage and see Dash standing there looking like a million billion trillion bucks! She was pretty bandaged up, but she had cleaned up a bit and her coat had a shimmer to it. I couldn’t see Fluttershy however. I figured she was probably hiding behind Dash.

“Ok Dashie! I’m coming out now. You sure Fluttershy isn’t going to freak out too much? By the way...where is she?”

“She’ll be fine Coal! Come on out Fluttershy. I want you to meet my new friend!”

As I emerge from behind the trees I see Fluttershy come out from behind Dash. ‘Oh my god!’ Doesn’t even describe it! In the show the only other ponies that even come close to Fluttershy’s cuteness are the CMC in my opinion, but seeing Fluttershy live made me question that. Any bronie knows of her cuteness, but that doesn’t even come close to how cute she is when she is looking right at you. She was hiding mostly behind Dash and I was only able to make out a small portion of her face, and that may be another reason why she looked so cute. But I didn’t

care. I just really really REALLY wanted to meet this pony!

“Hi Fluttershy.” I say walking through the path and across the little bridge. “I’m Coal! it is a pleasure to meet you!” She just yelped and ducked behind Dash again. “You don’t need to be scared of me. I know I may look weird to you, but you have my word that I would never harm a pony. Won’t you please come out? I’d really like to see you.”

Dash looked back at Fluttershy and gave her a sadistic grin. She jumped right next to me leaving Fluttershy completely exposed. Needless to say she didn’t take too kindly to it and immediately cowered down and started whimpering. It was the most heart wrenching thing I had ever seen.

“Fluttershy” I cooed “I don’t know how acceptable what I’m about to do is to ponies, but trust me when I say it is the only way for me to convey my feelings.” I stepped right in front of Fluttershy and got onto my knees. I could feel Dash glaring at me, not entirely sure what it is I was about to do. She didn’t stop me though, so I decided to go for it. I picked up Fluttershy and brought her to my chest and gave her the biggest, softest, but firmest hug I had ever given to anyone ever. I stroked her mane and whispered “It is alright Fluttershy. I won’t ever hurt you. You don’t need to fear me.”

Fluttershy looked up at me with those sweet teal eyes of hers. She didn’t say anything. She just looked at me intently with a bit of fear on her face. I kept stroking her for a few more seconds before I put my hand on her cheek and then leaned in giving her a small peck on her forehead. She went redder than then red could be. I was scared that maybe I went too far. Dash hadn’t bucked me in the back of the head yet, so I figured I may be in some kind of luck. Then Fluttershy did then one thing I never in my life would have guessed. She put her hooves around me and pulled me into her embrace. I’ve said it before and I have no doubt I’ll be saying this many times in the future: BEST! DAY! EVER!!! I wanted the moment to last forever, but sadly she eventually broke the embrace. It was all I could do not to cry a little missing the contact.

“Well that was unexpected!” Dash piped up. “It sure didn’t take too much for you to get over your fear this time Fluttershy.”

“Oh...well um... I just kind of pretended that Coal was a hairless bear, and it made it easier...I hope that is ok Coal. I don’t want you to be mad at me...”

I started laughing like a fool. They both looked at me like I was crazy, but I didn’t care. I was on cloud nine, in heaven; insert analogy for being so fucking happy here! I just didn’t care. I couldn’t contain it anymore. I laughed for a good two minutes before finally calming down enough to say: “A hairless bear... that is really funny Fluttershy! And I honestly doubt there is anything you’re capable of that could make me mad at you. You have got to be the sweetest thing I have ever seen in either of our worlds!”

She looked pleased through most of that, but at the comment about worlds she got a scared look on her face again.

“Uhhh Coal...I kinda didn't tell Fluttershy here about you being from another world just yet.” Dash said rubbing the back of her head a bit.

“Oh well, I hope that doesn't concern you too much Fluttershy.”

“It um...it is a little scary, but you're really nice Coal. I...I don't mind.”

I reached out and rubbed Fluttershy's head for a moment before saying: “I'm really glad you feel that way. Today has been a really weird day for all of us, but you and Dashie have made this one the nicest days I've had in a long time.”

“What? But you woke up in the forest alone and had to put up with my being suspicious of you, and then you carried me for three hours through the forest. That sounds like a pretty awful day to me!” Dash protested.

“Haha oh Dashie...even if the circumstances left a lot to be desired it was more than worth it after meeting you and Fluttershy here. Besides life back home was much more difficult in its own way. (I instantly regret that comment)”

“Oh dear...was your life really that bad Coal?”

“The answer is complicated Fluttershy, but you don't need to worry about it.” I get up off my knees and stretch a little before saying: “Well I guess I better build a tree house or something while there is still some light. I don't want to be sleeping on the ground tonight.”

This comment horrified the girls. “Coal what in Equestria makes you think we would let you sleep outside? Fluttershy has offered to take me in tonight since I can't get up to my cloud house, but I'm sure one of our other friends would be more than happy to take you in after they meet you. Just maybe cut back on the hugging and kissing hehe. It worked out with Fluttershy, but stuff like that may give ponies the wrong idea around here.”

“Oh um, thank you Dashie. I'll remember to contain myself next time, but I don't suppose one of your friends happens to be male? It is hardly proper for a man and a young lady to sleep under the same roof together (I am so full of shit).”

“What? Why? We aren't even the same species, and like you said; 'ponies where you come from are just simple animals'. It isn't like you're attracted to us or anything.” Now it was my turn to turn red. I tried to hide my face, but with Dashie and Fluttershy on both sides of me I couldn't really pull it off.

“Wait...you're not attracted to us...are you?” Dash gave me a look that I couldn't put my finger on.

“*Sigh* Well girls if I want you to trust me, so I can't lie to you. Yes I am kind of attracted to you girls.” They both gave me a very surprised look. Big eyes, small pupils, and mouths agape. “Now please let me explain before any trust or friendship I've earned is ruined before my second day here!” I crack my neck and knuckles to try and relax myself, but I think it only served to scare the girls more. “Ok first off, I would never take advantage or be with anybody...or err...any pony without their consent. As for the species thing, it is true that your appearances are different to say the least. You girls don't look like the ponies from my world. You have brighter coats, brighter eyes, nicer manes, and you're shaped differently. To give you an idea of what I mean: When I was carrying you back Dashie I took a few guesses as to how much you could possibly weigh. I don't know if being light is just a Pegasus thing or what, but it couldn't have been more than fifty pounds. Ponies where I come from range from 650-800 pounds I'd say.” I didn't think the girls could look more surprised, but boy was I wrong. “They have feelings and spirits of course, but...there really isn't any other way to say this without it sounding bad....so I'm just going to have to say it! They are basically petit horses that can't do as much work as a normal horse and are really only around so young farm girls can have something cuter to enjoy as a pet. In the past they were really useful, but now a days in my world they aren't really needed. I can't in good consciousness compare you girls to the ponies in my world. You are much much smarter; you're a lot cuter and sweeter. You girls can talk and have personalities. In all honesty girls, I can't even compare you to the human girls where I'm from. There are some nice ones, but you two are light years nicer and more charming than the ones I've met. I know I've only met you two since I've been here, but something is telling me that most ponies are at least close to being as nice and friendly as you two are. So yes, I am attracted to you girls, because you're friendly, smart, sweet, charming, and in all honesty not hard on the eyes.”

They were both just sitting there looking at the ground. There were no comments made; they just sat there looking dumbfounded. It stayed that way for several minutes and I was getting very concerned.

“I hope I didn't just ruin my chances of being their friend after that...”

Finally Dashie tries to look at me, but just can't look at me in the eyes. It really hurt seeing her like that. All I could do was hang my head and say: “I'm sorry girls. I know these feelings are very unwanted, but you deserved to know why I couldn't accept your offer. I hope you can forgive me. I'll leave now. Don't worry I won't bother you two anymore.” I walked past Dash not looking at her and made my way over the bridge and towards the forest. I was thinking about anything to try and keep myself from crying. I thought back to as many funny jokes as I could remember, I tried counting; I tried anything to keep the emotions locked up. All it ever came back to was “I just fucked up the best thing I ever had...” I was almost at the tree line when I heard Dash yell at me.

“Coal wait!”

I stopped and looked back. The pain must have been evident on my face because Dash had a look of shock as soon as she got close.

"I'm sorry about that Coal. We didn't....I didn't know what to say. No pony has ever said such nice things to us before. I guess I was just a little weirded out by it because of all those hugs and that kiss you gave Fluttershy. For a colt to do that it would be like he was confessing his love for her. I thought that since you were a different species that doing that stuff wasn't weird for you, but I guess it really was. You have a lot of guts to do that to a mare you just met ya know?"

I laughed again. Not a full hearty laugh like before, but a pleasantly pleased laugh. "I know Dashie. It made me pretty uncomfortable too. I just couldn't stand to see Fluttershy look so scared. If I had thought of any other way to express myself I would have done so. It just seemed like the only thing I could do ya know?"

"Yeah I know Coal, and you don't need to worry about it. I trust you when you say that you wouldn't take advantage of us."

"Thank...thank you Dashie...that means so much to me" I choked up a little. I managed to laugh it off before the water works started. That was when Fluttershy came flying over and hug tackled me into the ground.....wait.....WHAT!?

"Fluttershy what on Earth are you doing!?"

"Oh I'm sorry Coal...please don't be mad...I just...I didn't like you being so sad. I don't mind how you feel either...it just took me by surprise is all. I hope that is ok."

"Fluttershy if you keep hugging me like this I don't think a kick to the back of my head would be enough to ever make me mad." She gave me a warm smile and broke the hug (DAMNIT).

"Even if you have those kinds of feelings for us Coal, there isn't any guarantee that you will for any other pony right?"

"Well you're right Dashie, it's just that I have never had these kinds of feelings for anyone back home before. If only because I didn't like anyone there in that way. Yet I've already met two beings here who actually make me feel something. I've met hundreds in my world and only two here. With that kind of track record it is very likely that your friends are going to be awesome too, and I may end up liking them just as quickly. Of course you don't have to worry about me doing anything. It would just make living under the same roof really uncomfortable for me."

"I can understand that, but no we don't have any colt friends you could bunk with. So either you bunk with one of our friends or we make you." Dash had a very sadistic smile on her face, but I

loved it.

“HHAHAHA well when you put it like that I’ll just take a cold shower before bed. (INSTANT REGRET)”

“A cold shower.....why would you want that?” Dash asked giving me a funny look.

“Ehahahaha...ehhhh...errrrr...ummm well Dashie the thing is.....I’m sorry.”

“What? Why do you keep apologizing!?” It was then that Fluttershy pulled Dash in close and whispered something in her ear that turned her redder than a stop light. She just looked at me.

“I’m so very sorry...sorry...sorry” She raised her hoof up at me and for a second I thought she was going to hit me, but then she just burst out laughing. It was a glorious laugh. It was like when she laughed at Twilight’s eye muscles during the running of the leaves episode, but with fewer comments about eye muscles. Though that would have made it even funnier.

“Oh Coal that is too funny. I’m sure whoever you bunk with would appreciate that.” She had the biggest knowing grin on her face. I didn’t know if I should be happy or sad that this kind of talk didn’t bother them too much. Well at least not on her end. It was at this moment I desperately needed to figure something out. In the show whenever someone got hurt they never bled. Dash had dried blood on her when I first saw her come out of the forest, so what else was different from the show? With all this talk about being attracted to what not and this latest boner joke (half joking(GET IT!?!)) I was having a very hard time trying not to check out the girls....privates. I’M SORRY! I KNOW I’M HORRIBLE! BUT THEY DON’T WEAR CLOTHES!!! I’M CURIOUS ALRIGHT!?

I think Dash knew something was up because I was lost in my own head again. “Hey Coal? Equestria to Coal~ you in there?”

“Huh what!?...oh yeah yeah...sorry about that. I just kinda went blank for a minute. So um....who do you think would be the best choice for me to bunk with?”

“No worries Coal but let me think...” Dash tapped her hoof to her chin a few times before looking at Fluttershy and saying: “I’m thinking either Applejack and her barn, or Twilight. What do you think Fluttershy?”

“Oh um well....I think Twilight would be a good choice. She may even have a way to send Coal home.” At that comment my whole world crashed around me. I think the girls noticed because I assume I went whiter than Rarity.

“Whoa Coal are you alright?”

“Yeah...I’m fine...” I kicked at the ground a little before looking back up and saying: “Girls there is something I need to talk to you about, but if this Twilight is the one capable of sending me home...it would be better if she were there to hear it too.” The girls looked at each other and then shot me a concerned look.

“Is everything alright Coal...you look a little worried.” Fluttershy trotted over to me and put her hoof on my leg. “If anything is bothering you...you can tell us. We are your friends after all.” She gave me a comforting smile and it was all I could do not to scoop her up and smother her with love. Thankfully I managed to control myself.

“Everything is going to be fine Fluttershy...I’m sure of it! It’s just that what I am going to say may be a bit of a shock, and if this Twilight has the power to send me home then she is probably smart enough to know how to fix my err...problem. Not that it is a big one! It is more of a concern than a problem, but anyway we aren’t gonna get anything done standing here. So if one of you would be so kind as to show me the way I would be very thankful.”

“I have to stay and take care of the animals. One of the beavers has a rather nasty tooth ache. He just wouldn’t listen to me when I told him to give the maple trees a break.” That has to be the funniest damn thing I have ever heard Fluttershy say, and she called me a hairless bear.

“Hehe alright Fluttershy, it was wonderful meeting you. I hope we’ll get to see each other again soon.”

She gave me a slightly confused look before saying: “Oh um alright Coal, I hope so too.” She then said her byes to Dash and went back to her cottage. As she was walking back I couldn’t help but take a glance or two at her posterior. I didn’t want to ogle the poor dear I just wanted to know if I’m dealing with the undefined bodies or the defined bodies. Much to both my pleasure and horror a gust of wind blew Fluttershy’s tail out of the way and even though there were a dozen or so yards between us I caught a glimpse of her mare hood, I’m not proud of it! I am a complete ass hat and I just invaded her privacy! I hate myself! I’m just glad Dash didn’t notice. I would NOT be able to talk my way out of THAT!

Authors note: Heh! Can you believe this guy!? Also: HAPPY NEW YEAR!

Chapter 4: Meeting Twilight (sob story ensues)

Dash and I left Fluttershy’s property and were making our way down a beaten dirt path that led to Ponyville. When the town was in relative sight I turned to Dash and asked: “Should I really just be walking through the middle of town like this? I don’t want to scare anybo....I mean any pony.”

“Don’t worry about it Coal. There is a side path up ahead we can take that will move us around Ponyville and put us near Twilight’s house. If there is any pony around I’ll just cause a

distraction to give you enough time to slip inside.”

“Won’t Twilight be scared of me like Fluttershy?”

“Heheh naw. I’m sure she’ll be plenty freaked out, but if you’re as friendly with her as you’ve been with us it’ll be fine.”

“I certainly hope so Dash. If Twilight can make portals between worlds or what have you; I don’t even want to know what she could do to me.”

“She is a pretty tough pony, but she is also a bit...well...I don’t know how to put it. She just doesn’t have a lot of confidence is all. She has actually been pretty down on herself lately. She was actually trying out a new spell last night that was supposed to be really cool. I wonder if it worked...”

“I hope so. I don’t like the thought of any pony being sad or depressed.”

With that last comment we walked the rest of the way in silence. Thankfully there weren’t any ponies using this side path as well, so we managed to get to Twilight’s house with relative ease. I say relative because on the way I couldn’t help but stop and look at the town. I only got to see the backs of most buildings, but even so they were so colorful. If I ever saw houses or buildings the same colors back on Earth, I would have thought they looked horrid. Here though, they looked just perfect.

We finally made it to Twilight’s and managed to slip inside before any pony could see us. I’m glad Dash didn’t have to leave. I don’t think I could have handled this by myself without freaking out.

“Hey Twilight? I need to talk with you about some stuff, and uhhh I have a friend here I need you to meet.”

After a couple moments I could hear the clip clop of hooves on wood heading down some stairs. “Rainbow? What is on your mind? And what do you mean I need to meet this friend of yours? Not that I’m against the idea; it’s just that you sound so serious.”

“Yeah Twilight it is kind of a long story, but I feel I need to warn you right now. This friend of mine is a really nice guy, but he is just very...different.”

“Oh it’s a colt. I didn’t think you got along with colts all that well Rainbow.”

“Now what is that supposed to mean!? Are you trying to call me a filly-fooler?”

“No! I’m not I was just...augh never mind! Will you two come out now? How am I supposed to

meet this friend of yours if you're hiding from me?"

"Um Twilight..." I finally chime in. "Dashie wasn't kidding when she said that I'm...different. Before I come out I want you to promise me that you won't freak out."

"Dashie?" Twilight started to giggle. "I didn't know you two had THAT kind of a relationship." Dash just groaned. "But I'm sure that whatever you look like can't be all that bad. I promise I won't freak out."

"Alright Twilight...here goes nothing." I step around the bookcase that divides the front door to the main floor. Before I even make it fully around the corner I hear Twilight gasp and fall over. I look at her to find a mixed look of what I assume to be shock, terror, and curiosity.

"What...what are you!?"

"Twilight please calm down. I'm a human from Earth. I was brought to this world by I don't know what, and I promise you that I'm harmless. I would never hurt any pony."

Twilight seemed to calm down a little after my introduction. Dash trotted over to her and helped her up laughing a little.

"That's what you get for making fun of me Twilight."

"I wasn't making fun of you Rainbow! I was just having some fun with you."

"I know Twilight, but that doesn't mean seeing you freak like that wasn't fun for me."

They both shared a warm laugh for a minute or so before turning their attention back to me. "Well you already know that I'm Twilight Sparkle. What is your name?"

"My name is Coal. It is a pleasure to meet you Twilight." I walked over to her and extended my hand as you would for a handshake. She understood the gesture and gave me her hoof. It was weird shaking hands...hooves...whatever, but it didn't make it any less enjoyable.

"So Coal...you said that you don't know how you got here?"

"No I don't. I was driving home from work last night when I must of run a red light and was hit by a truck. I honestly shouldn't even be alive right now. (why do I make all of these horrible comments to these sweet ponies!?!?!?)"

Dash and Twilight had a genuine look of concern on their faces upon hearing this, but after a moment Twilight's face lit up like she just had an epiphany. "I don't know what all that means, but you said last night? At what time would you say it was?"

“Well I usually get out of the store by about ten after 10:00 pm. I had only been driving for a minute when the accident happened. So it was anywhere from 10:10 - 10:15 I would guess.”

Twilight looked like she was holding back the world’s biggest freak out. It was like someone had just won the lottery and found out that their home and everything they have ever owned burnt down. It was a weird look.

“Twilight, what does the time matter? You’re kinda missing the big point of the story. Coal says he should be dead! And you’re worried about the time! Why?” Dash exclaimed.

“Because Rainbow, last night I cast that spell I had been working on all this time! The spell was supposed to bring me an object from another world so that I could study it. Coal must be the object I summoned!”

“Well at least that answers that question...” I chimed in.

“Oh Coal, I’m so sorry! I didn’t mean to bring you here like this! I’m sure you want to get back home as soon as possible. I’ll get to work right away on finding a way to send you back!”

“There isn’t any need for that Twilight. I want to stay here if it is all the same with you.” God only knows how many times I have freaked out these ponies today, and only he knows how many more times it’ll happen. My guess...well at this rate I would put it somewhere in the eleventh digit location. Give or take a couple thousand times. So yeah stupid jokes aside...they looked shocked...again!

“What do you mean you want to stay here? Don’t you have a home to go back to?” Twilight asked with a hint of concern in her voice.

“Yes and no Twilight. Dashie this is the big news that I told you about earlier. I think you ladies need to take a seat, because this is going to take a little while.”

They both looked at each other and then looked back at me. I’m sure they had a million questions, but to my relief they silently sat down and looked at me intently.

“First off girls I need you two to understand that I’m completely sane. A lot of what I’m about to say won’t make a lot of sense. I just need you both to understand that there is simply no proper explanation and it is what it is.” They both nodded.

“Good, well the truth is that I never got a long in my world very well. I’ve always been pretty introverted and openly disapproving of the way people in my world behave. There are plenty of wonderful people where I’m from, but they are not the norm. For as long as I can remember I have always had trouble trusting people. Probably because when I was a young child I was exposed to some really nasty things that I won’t get into. I would like to say it didn’t leave any

emotional damage, but I would be a liar. Anyway, I grew up basically doing anything and everything wrong. On the outside I looked like any normal child, but on the inside I was full of all sorts of negative emotions. I managed to overcome most of my problems before my teenage years, but I couldn't get over my angst. I used to get sad and cry to make myself feel better, but that is a sign of weakness. So I changed those feelings into anger as I got older. I would see people and instantly hate them for being nothing more than a person. I was a stupid kid. I was like that for a solid three years. By the time I was sixteen I had gotten over my unnatural hate and now only had to deal with my depression. You see at that time I didn't have any friends, nor did I have what my people would call a lover. All I had in the world were my parents and my dog. There are some people who don't even have that and I really should have been appreciative of what I had, but I wasn't. At this point in time I didn't even want friends or a lover. I used to have friends, but as we got older we always drifted apart. As for a lover; which I guess I should just call a girl friend, didn't appeal to me either. At this time in my people's history the divorce rate is very high. People only got together because they wanted sex, or just anybody to be with. That's it! Plain and simple they only wanted the physical pleasure of a relationship and company. I didn't care about that. I wanted to find a lover who could also be my best friend. I wanted someone who I could hold and be held back. I wanted love. I didn't think it was asking too much, but I guess it was because I never found it. I couldn't stand the girls around me. They were all so selfish and hateful. They were immature and nasty. They were foul mouthed and dishonest." I take a deep breath and calm myself. Letting all of this out felt good, but really hurt to say.

"So to summarize; I didn't want friends or a relationship because I couldn't trust or bring myself to like anyone. For a few years I was simply content. I didn't want anything out of life, and life didn't ask anything of me. I went day by day doing the same things again and again, and I was Ok with that. However, a day came when I learned what I wanted in life, but it was something I could never have. I had given up all hope of ever finding love at this point, and all I wanted in life was an equal. Someone that I could be there for and they would be there for me. I wanted a family of my own, but was not willing to give up on my standards for the sake of just having someone. I didn't want just anyone, I wanted someone who would sincerely love me the way I would love them. What brought on these feelings I can't tell you girls yet, but I can tell you that it left me very confused. I spent the next five months getting slowly and slowly more and more depressed. I was no longer content. I was just sad, plain and simple. I was lonely, and there was no cure. That is basically where I was emotionally when you brought me here Twilight. I don't have anything to live for back on Earth. Except maybe for my parents, but I can't live my whole life for them. I love them for being the only ones to stand by me, but I can never confide in them. They honestly have no idea I've been feeling this way basically all my life. If there is a way to let them know that I'm safe then I would like to do that, but I won't go back to Earth. I simply refuse to." Each word was weighing heavily on my heart. I never told anyone any of this and yet I'm telling two ponies I just met...

"I feel like I can do well here. I feel like I can be happy here and maybe one day start a family. I don't care if I have to adopt, but for once in my life I have hope. Hope that I can make something more out of myself than just being a complete loser, and that is basically my story.

Sorry I took as long as I did. I hope you girls don't think too poorly of me now..." I started trailing off as I looked up at their faces. They both had tears streaming down like you wouldn't believe. I was honestly at a loss for words. Not only did I make two ponies that I would die for cry, but they were crying for me. I didn't know if I should be happy or sad.

"Coal...that...that is the saddest thing I have ever heard!" Twilight choked out. "I'm so sorry! Of course you can stay here! I wouldn't wish those feelings on the biggest jerk Equestria has to offer!"

Dash didn't say anything. She just stood up and trotted out of the library. She didn't look at me or Twilight, she just left.

"I hope Dashie doesn't hate me now..."

"I doubt it Coal. She just doesn't like any pony to see her cry, and that was a very sad story. I'm curious though, how could you say all that and not cry at least a little yourself?"

"There has been only one thing in my life that has been capable of making me cry. I don't have anymore tears to shed for myself. I honestly hate myself more than anything or anyone. I have made so many bad decisions in my life. I just need to make the right one now by staying here."

"Coal...you shouldn't hate yourself. I know we just met, but you don't seem bad to me."

"I promised Dashie that I wouldn't do this, but I don't think I can help it anymore." I walked over to Twilight and sat down right next to her. She looked at me with a little fear in her eyes not sure as to what I was about to do. I brought her into an embrace. It wasn't like with Fluttershy. I wasn't holding her to make her feel better. I was doing it to make myself feel better. She didn't fight it though. She was definitely surprised and even gasped a little when I pulled her in. After a moment she returned the gesture with a gentle almost nurturing hug. At the time I didn't know how old they were, but I felt like such a pathetic fool for being comforted by what I assumed to be just a child. After a few minutes I forced myself to let go. I could have gone on forever, but I didn't want Twilight to get uncomfortable.

"Thanks for that Twilight. I'm sorry that came out of nowhere. Hugs like that have always made me feel better when I'm feeling really down. You're a great friend Twilight."

"It was no big deal Coal. I'm glad I could make you feel better." She looked up at me with those eyes, oh god those eyes....NO! I need to get a hold of myself! I can't keep falling for every pony with really really beautiful eyes...and pretty manes...and...I am thoroughly fucked aren't I?

"Coal? are you alright?" Twilight asks snapping me out of it.

"Oh yes sorry about that Twilight. I got lost in thought for a second there."

"It happens to me all the time." she said smiling.

"Well Twilight...do you think I should go find Dashie? I don't want her feeling bad for me. That would only make me feel worse!"

"She'll be fine Coal. She is a really tough pony, but I have to ask...why do you call her Dashie? The only other pony I've ever heard call her that is our friend Pinkie Pie."

I spend the next few minutes telling Twilight about how I arrived and what happened between Dash and I. She seemed to get a clear understanding of the situation after I was done explaining. "So she just kind of accepted me. I've been calling her Dashie since."

"That's really sweet. Well anyway Coal I need to go pick up my assistant Spike from another one of our friends. Whenever he gets free time he always spends it with our friend Rarity. He has developed a bit of a thing for her."

"That is pretty cute. Does this Rarity feel the same way? (I am such a jerk)"

"No, she doesn't. I don't even think she knows though. She has a colt friend who takes up all of her attention. When Spike found out he took it pretty hard, but he still wants to be close to her."

I just about lost my shit right then and there! Ponies in relationships...if this world turns out to be a clop fic writer's wet dream I am going to punch something so hard...I don't even know what, but something is going to get broken!

"That's really sad. I hope he is taking it better now though."

"He is. I think his love for her is more platonic in nature though. He is still a baby after all."

"What!? He is old enough for these kind of feelings, but is still a baby? (You and I both know I'm not going to drop this act alright! So don't even moan about this shit!)"

"Well he is a baby for dragon standards. They live a very long time."

"Oh...I see...Twilight there is some stuff I'm kind of curious about. They are sort of personal in nature, but they aren't all about you specifically, but more about ponies in general. Would you be willing to answer a few?"

"Well I doubt you would ask anything inappropriate so I don't think I mind."

"I hope our definitions of inappropriate are the same. Hokay Twilight, how old are you and your friends?"

“Oh well I’m thirteen, Rainbowdash; Applejack; and Fluttershy are fourteen. Pinkie Pie just turned thirteen not too long ago, and Rarity is fifteen.”

“Seriously!? I knew that you girls were young, but not that young!”

“Is that a problem Coal? Thinking back to your story you must be nineteen or twenty at this point. A fair amount older than the rest of us.”

“I’m twenty yes, but what surprises me about your ages is just how mature you girls are. You girls don’t still live with your parents? You already have jobs and take care of yourselves? It is just really weird at that age.”

“All ponies are like this Coal. It is pretty uncommon for a filly or colt to stay with their parents past twelve. That is when we are mature enough to take care of ourselves. What’s it like in your world?”

“Where I’m from the legal age for a child to leave home is eighteen. The parents could get in a lot of trouble if they let their child leave before then and they got into trouble.”

“Eighteen!? That is so old though.”

“I don’t think our species mature at the same rate Twilight. Not that there is anything wrong with it, it’s just weird is all.”

“That’s really interesting Coal. I’ll have to write that down. In fact I should be writing most of this down!” Twilight levitates a roll of parchment and a quill from her desk and starts telekinetically writing at a very fast rate. I debate with myself for a moment if I should act surprised by this or not...may as well. I’m not dropping this charade until they really trust me or until I get caught.

“Whoa Twilight! How are you doing that!?”

“Doing what? You mean my magic? All unicorns can do at least this much. Don’t you have magic where you are from?”

“No we don’t. And not that I wouldn’t like to keep talking, but aren’t you forgetting something or should I say some dragon?”

“OHMYGOSHYOU’RERIGHT!!! I’M LATE!!!!I’LL BE BACK SOON COAL! PLEASE WAIT HERE!” Twilight rushes out of the library with enough speed that would make Dash look twice.

I laugh a little to myself before inspecting the library more closely. I see all sorts of books. Books on history, fantasy books, how-to books, books on how to write books; you name it and Twilight

probably has it. I decide to grab a history book and take a seat on the floor enjoying the peace. I'm sure Twilight will be back soon, may as well enjoy it while I can.

Author's note: The next chapter will be switching to the third person narrative style. It is pretty different compared to everything prior and hopefully everyone should be able to follow it easily enough. Also! I need to ask any readers out there a quick question. I have serious reservations with using asterisks to portray sounds or actions like 'gasp'. When this story was just being written for my own enjoyment I didn't care about using them that way. For something like this however, how do you readers feel about them? Yay! or Neigh! :D

Chapter 5: Things get Fabulous!

Dash closed the library door behind her and quickly made her way to Sugarcube Corner. She couldn't stay in there. She was not expecting to have so much drama today. Right now she just needed some cheering up, and who is better than Pinkie Pie in that regard?

Dash makes it to Sugarcube Corner in just a few minutes and forces herself to calm down a little before entering. Dash opened the front door setting off the little door chime.

"Hello? Are you here Pinkie?"

Mr. Cake poked his head out from the back room and called out: "Oh hello Rainbow Dash! Looking for Pinkie? She is up in her room."

"Thanks Mr. Cake..."

Dash ascended the stairs up to Pinkie's room before stopping at her bedroom door.

"Ok, calm down Dash. You just need a little cheering up. You don't want to upset Pinkie."

"What!? Why do you need cheering up Dashie!? Did something really really super ultra megaly sad happen!?" Pinkie exclaimed coming very literally out of nowhere!

Thankfully Dash was used to Pinkie when she got like this and quickly recovered from the bombardment of questions.

"Hi Pinkie, yeah something pretty sad happened. It isn't anything too serious, but I had to get away. I was kinda hoping we could hang out a bit to help take my mind off things."

"Ooooooh I would love that Dashie! I know! Let's go prank the flower triplets!!! They've been grumpy-goos all day!"

"Heheh, that sounds awesome Pinkie!"

* * * *

Twilight ran all the way to Carousel Boutique and in her fear of being late burst through the front door.

“Wahaha~! Twilight dear you scared the heavens out of me!” Rarity screams.

“I’m... *pant* sorry Rarity... *pant* I just don’t like to be late!” Twilight was gasping heavily.

“Dear it isn’t that big of a deal. Spike is always such the gentle dragon when he is here. He is with Sweetie Belle in her bedroom. The poor dear was so tired I think he may have fallen asleep. He was a great help today!”

Twilight after finally catching her breath chuckles a little bit at hearing this. “That is very comforting to hear Rarity. I’ll go get him out of your mane.”

Twilight trots to Sweetie Belle’s room and slowly opens the door. “Spike?...” Twilight cuts off as she sees a sight that makes her heart fill with 'd’awwwwww'. Spike and Sweetie Belle are both fast asleep on the floor nuzzled up next to each other. Twilight thought they were so cute she almost couldn’t bring herself to split up the two, but Coal was waiting back at the library and she didn’t want to be long.

“Twilight darling why are you just stan...” Rarity looks inside the room and sees the two asleep. She looks at Twilight and they both share a small chuckle. Rarity levitates Sweetie Belle into bed and Twilight levitates spike onto her back.

“Thanks again Rarity!” Twilight exclaims forgetting that there are two sleeping children in the room.

“No problem at all darling! That little sight earlier was more than enough thanks for today. Such adorable children. I only hope when I have foals they’ll be as cute as these two.” Rarity nuzzles Sweetie Belle gently in her sleep.

“You’re already giving thoughts to foals Rarity? Are you that serious with that mysterious colt friend of yours?”

“Oh no no no dear! Good heavens no! He is a wonderful stallion, but we aren’t ready for such things. I was merely making an observation.”

“Hehe, Ok Rarity. I was just surprised by the statement is all.....OH! How could I forget!? Rarity I need to tell you something...”

“Is something the matter Twilight? You look like you’re troubled.”

“No Rarity nothing is the matter, but well...let’s just say there is going to be a big change to Ponyville soon.”

“Whatever do you mean dear?”

“Do you remember that spell I cast last night?”

“The one that was supposed to bring an object from another world? Yes Twilight I remember it.”

“Well it worked! There is however one teensy tiny itty bitty problem.”

“Well don’t leave me in suspense darling what is it!?”

“The object I summoned wasn’t an object at all. It was a living sentient creature called a human from that world.”

Rarity nearly fainted on the spot. “Twilight darling are you alright!? It isn’t dangerous is it? Oh my goodness dear that is so terrifying...”

Twilight raised her hoof up to calm Rarity down a little so she could speak.

“I’m fine Rarity, and no he isn’t dangerous. He seems like a very nice human. I think, he is the only one I know so I can’t compare him with much.”

“He, darling?” Rarity put on a devilish grin “So you were a lone with a man in your library? Twilight do I need to tell Pinkie about this so that we may have a party for the new couple?” Rarity giggled at her own antics.

Twilight blushed profusely before getting out: “No no no! It isn’t like that Rarity. I don’t think he would even find us attractive. He is really different. I’m telling you this because he wants to stay in Ponyville and you will surely be meeting him soon!”

“He wishes to stay? He doesn’t want to go home?”

“It is a long story Rarity, but it is best saved for another time. I need to get Spike home and into bed before it gets too late.”

“And also get back to this Coal of yours hmhm”

Twilight just shot her an unamused look which only made Rarity laugh harder as Twilight was leaving the Boutique.

* * * *

“Geez! When is Twilight getting back here!? I am sooo bored. Hehe! Oh Sweetie Belle. I’m always going to think of you when I say that.” I droned out.

Twilight had only been gone twenty minutes, but after all the excitement of the day I just couldn’t calm down. I had already looked at a couple of books. It isn’t like I’m a fast reader or anything. It is just that the books I had picked up were unusually short. They were informative yes, but short all the same. I was never much for reading anyway. The only time I enjoyed reading was when a chapter to a fan fiction I followed came out. I wasn’t too picky about those, so I always had something to read. My favorites being HiE stories, and if there was a romance tag that didn’t hurt either. Fun fact time! When I get bored I like to talk to myself...a lot! I start singing the song “I Might Be a Brony Now”. It was kind of my go to song for anything everything pony related. I sang the song a couple times before I decided to look out the window. It was the most amazing sight I had ever seen. There were ponies of all colors and shades going about their business. I was hoping I would catch a glimpse of a few of the more popular background ponies like Ditzzy Doo, but no such luck. I really just wanted to go out there and mingle, but I knew Twilight would get pissed if I did. I’m not sure how I knew that...it just felt that way.

“Man I hope that girl gets back soon! Wait...what am I expecting to happen? I guess I just want to talk some more I don’t know.”

I kept going on and on about whatever came to mind for what felt like hours. Been in Equestria for nearly one day and already reverting to my old habits...this can’t end well.

* * * *

Twilight with Spike on her back slowly trotted up to her tree house. She was about to open the front door when she heard all this talking going on inside. She couldn’t understand what was being said, but it was definitely Coal.

“Who is he talking to!?” she asked no pony particular. She slowly opened the door and as silently as she could closed it behind her. Coal apparently didn’t hear anything because he was still off in his own little world. Twilight got a little bit closer and finally was able to hear what Coal was saying.

“...and then what!? They are ponies Coal! Innocent sweet little ponies! There is no way in either of our worlds you’re going to find a pony to love you as anything more than a friend, and even if you did should you still pursue it? Let’s take a look at some of the pros and cons here. Con: you’re a different species and having children may be impossible. Pro: you can always adopt. Con: The child could be picked on for having such a weird parent. That basically applies to any mares I may find too. *Sigh* *groan* I am such a little bitch when it comes to this shit!”

Twilight was shocked to hear Coal talk this way. She had never heard swearing used so easily, or being directed at oneself. She didn't like it, but she just had to hear more.

"Geez Coal get a grip. You're in a world full of the most awesome creatures imaginable. They are beautiful, kind, sweet, smart, loving, generous, fun, and for whatever reason they seem to trust you. ARRRG!!! Do I even deserve their trust!? I'm probably the most evil thing this world has ever seen! It isn't like I would ever hurt any pony! I mean...how could anyone ever do that!? I would never be able to forgive myself, but it is still in my human nature to basically be a complete and total dick to anything that moves! *sigh* no it isn't...I'm just being a fool again." Coal collapses on the floor holding his face in his hands. "This would be so much easier if I weren't attracted to these ponies."

At that statement Twilight's heart skipped a beat.

"But how can I not be? I know I told Dashie and Fluttershy that I found them attractive, but there is so much more to it than that! Twilight is just as attractive too! They are shaped differently sure, but every time I'm with them all I can think about is how happy they make me."

Twilight's face was far past flushed at this point. She was at a loss for words. She desperately wanted to leave, she didn't want to hear all of this! But a part of her did, and there was no going back now.

"It would also be easier if they wore clothes. I swear I've been staring at more ass here in one day than I ever did back home! Maybe I should just get myself gelded..." Twilight had to fight every urge not to jump out and scream at him for saying something so stupid. "Naw...that is a dumb idea, but it is easier than the alternative. GROOOAAAANNN!!! I best just put it out of my mind for now. Hopefully I can get a decent job and a place of my own to stay. Then if I ever get too troubled by all these sexy ponies I can get it taken care of in a few minutes."

Twilight was in shock. She had never heard any pony say such things. It just wasn't normal to them, and here was this creature; basically rocking all her preconceived notions of him. She didn't know whether to be flattered or scared that he may do something.

"Well I feel better now! Getting all that out of my system really does the trick. I'm glad nobody errrr no pony heard all that though. They would probably freak out HAHAHA~!"

Twilight couldn't wait anymore, she needed to lay down for a while. She backed up slowly and after a couple of sighs and inner pep talks she opened the door and then closed it with a solid thud.

Author's note: If you guys haven't heard "[I Might Be a Brony Now](#)" by EdgeOfEverfree then check it out! I had something manly in my eye the first time I heard it...

Chapter 6: Awkwardness is awkward!

Authors note: I'm a very huggy kind of guy in real life; especially when I get emotional. I've given Coal that same trait. Just saying... *wink*

* * * *

"Hmm? Oh hey Twilight you're back!"

Twilight was having a hard time looking at Coal. She just acted like she was really tired (she didn't have to act too hard). "Hi Coal, sorry that took so long. I had to walk back slowly so I didn't wake up Spike." She said matter-of-factly nodding towards the sleeping dragon on her back.

"So that is Spike huh? He is a pretty cute little guy I have to admit. He really doesn't look all that much like a baby though. He looks like he would be seven or eight if I had to guess."

"Wow Coal, that is rather impressive. I hatched him when I was five so yes. He is eight."

"Wait...you hatched him? Twilight, I'm sure there is a story behind that but...the way you put it sounds really...odd. (Do I just love messing with these ponies or what!?)"

"I hatched him with my magic. I don't know how long he was an egg, but I've had the little guy most of my life. I call him my assistant, but he is more like my little brother than anything." Twilight levitated spike into his little basket bed and planted a small peck on his forehead. I couldn't see Spike, but I'm sure even in his sleep he had a huge grin on his face.

"That is really sweet Twilight. I wish I had a big sister like you when I was his age."

"Do you not have any siblings Coal?"

"Oh no, I have two brothers and two sisters. I'm the fourth child of five. There is a ten year gap between myself and my younger older brother. So basically growing up all my siblings were long gone, with the exception of my little sister. We never got a long though. There is a two and one half year difference between us. So when I was younger and didn't really want a little sister because girls were gross hehehe; I couldn't really appreciate it. As I got older though I became more open to the idea, but she changed for the worse. She got a really bad attitude and basically did everything she could to make my parent's lives a living hell. So I basically never considered her more than blood. She is still my little sister and I love her for that, but I sure as heck don't like her any! As for my older siblings...they've all made really poor decisions in life, but I think they're good people now. They all have been married and divorced and then remarried, and they all have children. There really isn't any time in their lives for a stupid little brother who still lives with the folkies; ya know?"

“Not to be mean Coal, but if you keep telling me stories like that; I won’t be able to talk to you anymore! Don’t you have a single story you can share where anything good happens!?” Twilight cried out as she hid her face from him.

“I’m sorry Twilight....I didn’t mean to upset you. Please don’t be sad...I wouldn’t be able to forgive myself if I made you sad. You and Dashie and Fluttershy you’re all.....the best things that have ever happened to me. I...I mean I couldn’t ask for better friends, and um Twilight...there is something I need to say to you. Something I should of said earlier.”

Twilight didn’t want to hear it. She was so scared that he was going to tell her his feelings about her. She didn’t hate Coal, but she had just met him and didn’t want that kind of a relationship. She also didn’t want to hurt someone who seemed to have hurt enough as it is. She just slowly looked at him with fear in her eyes.

“Twilight...I...I...I appreciate you bringing me here. I know our time together has been short, and I’ve basically done nothing but bum the life out of you, but...all of you have made me so very happy. Thank you Twilight! I sincerely thank you for bringing me here! I will do anything and everything I possibly can to repay this kindness! I know it wasn’t on purpose, but that doesn’t matter! All that matters is that you still did, and I owe my life to you!” Coal was starting to work himself into a fit with all the emotion he was pouring out. There is simply no getting over everything that has happened to him today easily.

“C-c-c-coal...you don’t owe me anything...” Twilight was back peddling a bit. Coal was moving closer to her with almost every word.

“BUT I DO TWILIGHT! I believe you summoned me right before I was hit by that truck on my way home. If you hadn’t summoned me I would be nothing more than a stain on the ground!”

Twilight didn’t know what to say. Coal was looking at her with the most piercing of eyes. It was like he was looking into her very soul. She wanted to look away, but she couldn’t. Coal knelt down in front of Twilight and for the second time today he put his hands upon her. He didn’t bring her into a hug this time, but put his hands upon her cheeks and made her look at him squarely in the eyes. They were an inch apart at best.

Twilight was so scared. She couldn’t feel any strength in her body. It was like those eyes sucked out all her will to do anything. All she could do was stare at Coal as he slowly got closer and closer.

Coal rested his forehead upon Twilight’s (yes, he did avoid that horn...just...just ow!) as he let out a content sigh and said: “Thank you so much Twilight. I know I’m weird to you, I know my actions are probably strange; but you and the others mean the world to me Twilight. No! more than that! I just want you to know that whenever you may need me, I’m going to be there for

you.” Coal rubbed Twilight’s cheeks a little before backing up and letting go. “I’m sure you could use a good break from all this drama Twilight. I’m going to head back to the forest tree line and find a nice tree to sleep in.”

Twilight was still in a small state of shock. She was both relieved and almost...pleased at the way the situation ended. However, Coal’s statement brought her out of her daze and she knew she had to say something.

“Coal wait...you don’t have to leave. I-I’m not mad at you or anything. It’s just an awful lot to take in. I don’t want you sleeping outside in the cold. You can stay here if you want. You can sleep in my bed and I will sleep on the couch. I’m sure you’re a lot more tired than you’re putting on.”

“Thank you Twilight I...I...I’ll take you up on half of your offer. I’ll take the couch and you sleep in your own bed. I won’t accept any other deal. Besides...I’m probably waaay too big for your bed. Heck I’m too big for the couch, but I can sleep on the floor. In all honesty Twilight it wouldn’t be the first time I have, so you don’t need to worry about me.”

“Are you sure Coal? I don’t want you feeling like I...that we don’t care about you.”

“Ooooooh man! Twilight! That is so unbelievably sweet! AAUUGH!”

This statement caught Twilight completely off guard. She tensed up all over again.

“Sorry about that Twilight. It’s just that you girls are so unbelievably awesome and nice and I’m just not used to it. It means a lot to me hearing you say that Twilight. Thank you, but I insist on sleeping down here. Speaking of which you are definitely right when you say I’m tired. This has been the longest but most fulfilling day of my life! As much as I don’t want it to end...I’m basically half a sleep already. I’m going to follow Spike’s lead and get some shut-eye.”

Twilight calmed down immensely and gave Coal a small smile. “Happy to Coal. You have a good sleep, and tomorrow we can get some more stuff worked out. I’m sure you don’t want to be sleeping on my floor every night.”

“You too Twilight, and I could probably get used to it if it meant I got to talk to you more. *yawn* sleep tight Twilight.”

Coal heads to the side of a bookcase and stretches out underneath it; finally calming down for the day.

Twilight on the other hoof had another blush attack from Coal’s comment. She really wished he would stop handing (hoofing?) out these compliments. It definitely made her feel pretty weird. It was late though and she was tired. She thought about writing to the princess about Coal, but

she decided sleep was more important for once. She climbed into her bed and quickly drifted off into a sweet slumber.

* * * *

“*yawn* Oh man...that was not a comfortable night. It feels like I slept on my leg wrong or something.” Coal got up and looked around the library for a few minutes. “I guess I’m the first one up. I wonder if there is anything I could do...hmmm. In fan fiction the first morning usually consists of the human making breakfast, but I can’t cook to save my life. Hmmm...”

Coal didn’t hear the pitter patter of reptilian feet against the floor, nor was he prepared for what happened next.

“What are you!? Are you here to rob us? I won’t let you! AUGH!” Spike jumped up on Coal’s back trying to bite and claw at him desperately.

“Whoa whoa whoa Spike! Calm the hell down man!” Coal yelled trying to get the little dragon off of his back.

“You can talk?” Spike asked jumping to the floor and staring intently at Coal.

“Yes I can Spike, and I’m not a thief. I’m not here to hurt anyone either. Did Twilight tell you about her spell to summon an object from another world the other night?”

“Hmmm...yeah I kinda remember something like that.”

“Well she accidentally summoned me instead of just some object. I’ve decided to stay in Ponyville and Twilight was kind enough to offer me a place to sleep for the night. Don’t ask why I want to stay. It is a long story and I haven’t eaten anything in...Oh god...it has to have been nearly forty hours now.”

“Whoa dude! How are you still alive? I wouldn’t be able to move if I went that long without food. I’m sorry for attacking you bro. We cool?” Spike raised his fist asking for a fist bump. Coal returned the gesture.

“No worries man. Honestly it does my heart good to see you would attack something literally several times your size to protect Twilight. I just wish it hadn’t been me.”

“Oh yeah hehe. Twilight is really important to me. I would do anything for her, she is like my big sister ya know?”

“Yeah I can understand that. Anyway, I hate to be a bother but...is there any way I could get some breakfast and then maybe do some chores or something to pay for it?”

“Hey Coal you don’t need to pay for it. A free meal is the least I can do after attacking you like that. Besides I’m sure Twilight wouldn’t want our guest to feel like a burden.”

“Thanks Spike! You’re a good guy; ya know that?”

“Thanks Coal! You too! So anyway what are you and what can you eat?”

“Oh well I’m a human, and we are omnivores so we can basically eat anything that technically counts as food (I should not have said that T.T).”

“Whoa...you...eat meat?”

“Yeah I do, but don’t worry I don’t eat ponies or anything sentient. I also don’t have to eat meat in order to live, but I won’t lie to you Spike...I’m gonna miss it. Since I know ponies are herbivores I’ll be forgoing meat from now on in order to prevent any....unpleasant situations.”

“Wow...that’s really nice of you. I don’t think I could give up eating something I really enjoy just to try and make others feel better like that.”

“No offense buddy, but aren’t you a dragon? Don’t dragons eat meat?”

“We don’t have to. I’ve never had it so I don’t miss it or anything.”

“Cool cool, so what do ya’ll have on tap?”

“On what?”

“What do you have to eat I mean...”

“Oh well....we have hay, oats, barley, alfalfa, I have some gemstones...”

“I hate to interrupt you buddy, but do you have anything that isn’t basically grass? And you eat gemstones? Man that has to get really expensive.”

“Oh it isn’t that bad. There is a gem mine a ways out of Ponyville. I go there sometimes to find a snack. It is usually pretty safe...unless Diamond Dogs show up.”

“Diamond Dogs? (I think I'm getting good at this...)”

“Yeah they are kinda like you in how they can walk on two legs, but they aren’t very smart. Plus they are really mean. They kidnapped a friend of mine once and we had to go save her. Turns out she didn’t need saving after all. She was so awesome she took care of those dogs all by

herself!”

Coal laughed a little thinking back to that episode. He enjoyed it because it actually gave Spike and Rarity a bit of character development, and it gave Rarity one of the best lines ever. 'I'm not whining! I am complaining!' And you all know the rest.

“That friend of yours wouldn't happen to be the pony named Rarity would it?”

Spike looked up at Coal shocked. “You know about Rarity?”

“Twilight told me a bit about you yesterday. Your relationship with Rarity came up at one point.”

“Aww gees Twilight! She isn't supposed to tell any pony how I feel about Rarity! Geez, you must think I'm such a loser. Like....how is a pony ever gonna love a dragon?”

“Not at all Spike. Personally I think you're a pretty brave little guy. I know Rarity has a colt friend, but you put your feelings aside just so you can be close to her. That is the most selfless thing I have ever heard, and your apparently really young! I've got twelve years on you buddy and I couldn't do that. I would be too jealous or depressed.”

“Thanks man, it isn't that bad though. Knowing that she is happy is enough, but enough of this talk. Lets get ourselves something to eat. Oh yeah you mentioned no grass hmmm...how about fruit?”

“That sounds awesome Spike! What are our options?”

“Well we've got some oranges, bananas, some apples from Sweet Apple Acres...”

“Those! (I'm such a loud mouth)”

“Whoa! What?”

“Sorry about that. Apples just sound really good right now.”

“No worries bro. Apples it is.”

Coal spent the next couple hours listening to Spike tell him about Applejack, Pinkie Pie, and a lot about Rarity. He couldn't help but respect the little guy. He knew who he wanted to be with, but couldn't and he was taking it in stride. Here's Coal basically torn between every mare he's met. Not that he didn't have feelings for them before, it's just that after the whole blood and defined body parts thing... all preconceived notions about this world were thrown out of the metaphorical window.

10:13 rolled around and they both finally heard Twilight waking up. She slowly came down the stairs and found them in the kitchen.

"Morning sleeping beauty" Coal says jokingly.

"What?" Twilight and Spike asked at the same time.

"Hahaha don't worry about it. It is a joke from my world. I just can't help myself sometimes."

"Sal'cool bro" Spike said bumping fists again.

"I see you two are getting along well. I didn't even think about introducing Spike to you Coal. I'm sorry about that guys. I hope you weren't too weirded out Spike."

"He took it like a champ Twilight." Spike shot Coal a pleased grin and went back to munching on another apple.

"So Twilight...what's on the agenda for today?" Coal asks hoping she has given it some thought.

"I haven't really thought about it too much (shit!). What do you want to do Coal?"

"Well...I want a job...a place of my own. Not that I'm unhappy being here, I just don't like weighing others down. I want to get to know the community and in turn they'll get to know me. I hope they'll come to accept me as a town member and God willing a friend. So I guess I want a lot of things."

"I think we should tackle introducing you to every pony first. It will make getting a job easier, which you'll need for a home. But can I ask you something Coal?"

"Of course!"

"Who is this God you keep mentioning?"

"That is a very long and very thoroughly discussed question where I come from. My own beliefs aside; he is simply a very important being that created the universe and all life in it."

"That is amazing! We have princess here who can do soo much, but I can't say that they are the creators of all life. Does that mean that humans don't...well um...breed like normal creatures?"

"When I say he is the creator of all life I mean the original. He made the first humans who then had children and their children had children and so on and so forth. He doesn't necessarily play a direct hand in each birth. It is a miracle every time though, but humans are mammals that breed just like any other mammal. Not to be too risqué Twilight, but I'm pretty certain that male

and female ponies have the same parts as male and female humans...if you know what I mean.”

Twilight and Spike both looked like they had steam rising from their ears their faces were so hot.

“Please calm down. I’m sorry I keep doing this to you Twilight. It’s just that there isn’t any modesty left where I am from. Nobody is embarrassed about anything anymore. So talking about this kind of stuff just doesn’t come across as being inappropriate. I’ll try harder to remember that ponies and dragons are more sensitive to these topics in the future.”

“It’s alright Coal. I’m starting to get used to it.”

“I don’t know if that is a good thing Twilight.” Spike chimed in.

“Spike, you can have the day off. I’m going to show off Coal to every pony.”

“Woooooo! Later Coal! Bye Twilight! You know where to find me if you need me!” With that he rushed out the door making his way towards Rarity’s Boutique.

Twilight and Coal shared a knowing laugh together. Twilight then went back upstairs after grabbing an apple to get cleaned up. It was at this point that nature was calling and Coal’s biggest fear was about to come out in the open.

“Ummm Twilight?”

“Yes Coal?”

“Ponies have normal bathrooms right? You know, plumbing and running water and all that?”

“Of course we do Coal, we aren’t savages.”

“Oh thank God! Could you point me to one, I need to take care of business.”

Twilight giggled at the metaphor and pointed him down a corridor leading to the bathroom. He stepped inside and was very surprised to see it was just like a normal human bathroom. There was a toilet (YES!) a sink, a shower, a mirror, and basically anything you would expect to see in a normal restroom.

After overcoming that ordeal of awkwardness Coal stepped out to find Twilight looking prim and pristine. She had fixed up her mane and was looking well rested. “I take it you’re all ready to go Twilight?”

“Yes I am. I’ll be honest Coal I’m...a little nervous about how every pony is going to react to

you.”

“You and me both Twilight, but it needs to be done if I’m going to live here. Lets just get the hard part over with.”

Twilight nodded and they made their way outside. It needs to be said now; I’m surprised I’ve gone this long without mentioning it. Twilight and the other mares are basically a little over three maybe about four feet tall. Coal is at six feet three inches tall. So he is probably about as tall if not a little taller than Celestia. Therefore he sticks out like a sore thumb, and has to duck underneath most doorways. They step outside and are immediately blinded by the late morning sun. It is so much brighter than the show makes it seem. It takes Coal a couple of minutes for his eyes to adjust after being in Twilight’s low lit library.

“So how are we gonna go about this Twilight? Should we just walk around and mingle or would you rather introduce me to some ponies specifically?”

“I want you to meet my friends first. I think you’ll like them.”

“I’m sure I will, but that reminds me. Did you happen to see Dashie again last night?”

“No Coal I’m afraid I didn’t, but again you don’t need to worry. I’m sure she is more than fine by now. We’ll probably run into her while we are going about our business anyway.”

“Alright Twilight, I trust you. Spike already told me a bit about your other friends. He spoke a lot about Rarity she sounds really nice. Granted I don’t think she’ll like me very much. I’m not big into being OVERLY neat and tidy, and as you already know I can be pretty crude at times...”

“Don’t worry about it Coal, she can be...difficult, but she is a good pony. I’m sure she can get over your personality differences. On the other hoof, I think you and Applejack will get a long great! She is a no nonsense kind of pony herself. I’ll warn you ahead of time though, she can be pretty...forward at times.”

“What do you mean forward? Like she is forward in an...adult sense (...I'm scared!), or in a not holding back anything she is thinking sense? (PICK ME!)”

“The latter, I don’t think she is even interested in romance at the moment. She is far too busy with her farm.”

“That’s another thing I already like about her. She sounds like a really down to earth hard working kind of pony. Who knows, I may be able to convince her to give me a chance at a job on her farm.”

“That isn’t a bad idea Coal. We should see her last then. She is probably very busy working right

now. I also need to warn you about Pinkie Pie...”

“No need Twilight. Spike already gave me a fair warning, and in all honesty...she sounds like a doll.”

“What do you mean?”

“A pony that does nothing but try to make others laugh and smile sounds like the sweetest thing anyone or any pony could ever do!”

“Wow, when you put it like that I see what you mean.”

“I think you're really lucky to have all these wonderful friends in your life Twilight. If I didn't have you as a friend I would be insanely jealous.”

“You're doing it again Coal. I know you mean well, but when you say things like that I can't help but get the idea that you mean more than what you're saying.”

“Oh sorry about that Twilight. But it is the truth. I don't feel the need to hide behind a mask here. I feel like as long as I'm not saying anything mean I can say anything without being judged. I guess it still makes others uncomfortable though...”

“I don't mind it too much myself Coal. It is actually pretty nice knowing I can make some pony or ummm...somebody happy. It's just that you lay it on pretty thick, and that could scare new friends. I'll be honest I was a little put off when I first met you. Your story made it sound like you would be a recluse and unable to confide in anything, and yet you were pouring your heart and soul out to Rainbow and I.”

“It's cause I trust you Twilight. You don't seem like the judging type, nor does Dashie or Fluttershy for that matter. I feel like I can be myself with you girls. Sorry that I put you off when we first met, but I'm glad you're still my friend.” Twilight smiled up at Coal. Warm feelings would be had for hours.

-- First Person --

Twilight gave me a little nuzzle on my thigh and just told me not to worry about it, and that she was glad to be my friend. If it were not for the fact that I am suddenly aware of all the ponies looking at me I would of probably glomped Twilight for some more huggy time. Realizing we were being watched this entire time Twilight and I looked at each other and silently made our way to anywhere but here. As we were walking I could of sworn I heard a pony scream 'The horror! The horror!' I would of laughed had I not known that it would really freak out every pony.

We came up on what I knew to be Sugarcube Corner, but I still let Twilight tell me about it. We

stepped inside and were immediately greeted with a lot of gasping and shuffling of hooves. There were a few customers browsing and Mrs. Cake was working the counter. Every pony in there just stood in horror as they saw me.

“Um hi?” I manage to get out with a little wave.

Every pony just kind of looked at each other and waved back. Thankfully Twilight had given some thought as to how to introduce me the easy way.

“Every pony you don’t need to be scared. This is Coal. He is a human from a different planet that I brought here by accident. He really likes it here and wants to stay. Don’t worry he is completely harmless, and I can say from personal experience is very friendly.”

Every pony in there lightened up a bit, but were still a little apprehensive. I decided I should probably say something.

“I know I look different, but I can’t wait to get to know all of you. I hope you can get past my appearance and get to know me better, because I really do love it here. Ponyville is the nicest place I have ever seen, and every pony I have met has been more than hospitable. I will gladly do anything any pony wants to earn your trust!” With that little speech over I did a very over dramatized bow. I think every pony lightened up a lot more after hearing that.

I spent the next few minutes being introduced to the ponies in the store before they went back about their business. I was so happy to be accepted so easily. I can’t even describe how wonderful it felt to be a part of such a blessed community.

“So Mrs. Cake, have you seen Pinkie? I wanted to formally introduce Coal here to all of my friends.”

“No dearie I’m afraid I haven’t seen her since she left yesterday evening with Rainbow Dash.”

“She was with Rainbow? Did they happen to say what they were doing?” I couldn’t stop thinking about Dash. She is such a strong pony most of the time...

“No they didn’t dear, but Rainbow Dash looked pretty down when they left. If I was a betting mare I would say they left to do some pranks. Probably because that’s what they always do to cheer up.”

“Thank you Mrs. Cake. I told you she would be fine Coal. I’m sure she is feeling like a million bits right now!”

Chapter 7: Meeting Rarity (fabulosity ensues)

Authors notes: Confound my readers! You all make me so happy!
Must...post...more...chapters...sooner! Here! HRRGGH!

Twilight and I said our goodbyes as we head out for Rarity's Boutique. We were way ahead of schedule since we didn't see Pinkie Pie, but you never know how long revealing myself to some pony as dramatic as Rarity may take.

When we arrived at Rarity's we could both hear all sorts of chaos going on inside. There was yelling and it sounded like a lot of stuff was getting broken. I rushed the door leaving Twilight gaping at my reaction. As soon as I opened the door a large grey stallion with a black and white mane was thrown out of the doorway right on top of me. He took one look at me and screamed like a little girl before taking off with enough speed to leave a dust trail in his wake. Rarity came stomping out completely exasperated.

"The nerve of that colt! I should of never dated him!"(Does that mean Rarity just chucked that guy!? DAMN GURL!) It was then she saw me on the ground looking confused and a little concerned. She let out a gasp and reared back falling over onto her side. I stood up and walked over to her. I figured I would at least be polite and help her up. She looked like she wanted to scream when I helped her, but when I started dusting her off she began to lighten up a little. That was when Twilight came over.

"What was that all about Rarity? Oh this is my friend by the way!"

"Huh wha?" She looked at me with those gorgeous blue eyes (here I go again) and started sizing me up I would assume.

Now I had always imagined how I would introduce myself to Rarity, but I never thought I would have the balls to actually do it. I took a knee and with both hands lifted up one of her hooves and gently kissed it saying: "My name is Coal. It is a pleasure to finally get to meet you Miss Rarity."

Can anyone out there guess what happened next? I bet you can.....THAT'S RIGHT!!! MORE SHOCKED PONIES!!! Rarity regained her composure first and backed up a little looking a bit red.

"Oh my...um thank you...Coal. It is a pleasure to meet you as well!"

"What in Equestria Coal!?" Twilight exclaimed. "You didn't greet any other ponies like that!"

"Well Twilight I know from what Spike has told me that Miss Rarity here holds herself to a different standard. My world may not be as chivalrous as it used to be, but we still know how to treat a lady."

Rarity beamed at being called a lady. She walked over to Twilight and gave me a very delicate smile.

“Coal, what did we just get done talking about not a single hour ago about being too friendly?” Twilight did NOT look amused.

“Twilight please, he was just being a gentle...something. It doesn’t bother me in the slightest. I would dare say that it was quiet charming.” The smile on her face got a little bigger. Which made me smile.

“Thank you Miss Rarity.(I am so very happy right now...)”

“So Rarity, what was the deal with that stallion?” Twilight interjected.

Rarity humphed. “You mean that colt! That WAS my colt friend, but he is definitely no gentle pony!”

“What happened? That is if you don’t mind talking about it Miss Rarity.”

“Not at all dear. The short answer is that he didn’t much care for the way Spike comes over to help out. He started being very nasty to him and I merely told him to be nice to Spike. Spike is such a dear and definitely does not deserve to be treated so poorly! He didn’t take it too well and started being very unkempt towards me. I lost my temper and told him off...with a few additional things occurring as well.”

I took a look inside the Boutique to see that there was stuff thrown everywhere. I had never seen a bigger mess in all of my life.

“What happened to Spike?” Twilight asked with genuine concern.

“I sent him off with Sweetie Belle and her friends before the fight got too serious. I may have lost my temper, but I am still a lady and I know to look after the young ones.”

The three of us entered the Boutique and got a better look at the damage done. Nothing looked to be broken at first glance, but there was definitely a lot of picking up to do.

“Oooh~ I don’t have the patience for this! I have soo~ many orders that need filling, but I am too stressed out right now to do a proper job on any of them!”

Lord forgive me for what I am about to do, because he knows if Rarity accepts what I’m about to offer...I’m going to enjoy it a lot more than I should.

“Miss Rarity, if you're stressed...then I could help with that.” Twilight and Rarity both gave me a

look of curiosity eagerly awaiting my explanation. "I would be more than happy to help clean up this mess, and as for your stress well...I was known for being able to give amazing massages back home. Pony bodies are a bit different, but I think I can still do a good job at it."

Rarity's eyes lit up like a Christmas tree. "Oh Coal that sounds wonderful, but I couldn't let you do all that for me. I don't have anything to offer you in return."

"Actually Rarity you do. You see unlike ponies, humans wear clothes all the time. I only have this one pair and I'm sure I stink right now. I know from what Spike has told me that you are an amazing tailor. I would be more than happy to help clean up this mess, and make you feel better for free, but if you absolutely have to pay me back; some clothes would be fantastic."

"Humans HAVE to wear clothes? Why is that?" Twilight asked.

"Eheheheh umm Twilight... you just gave me grief for being friendly. You have no idea how uncomfortable answering that is going to be, but you're my friend and I'll tell you. Miss Rarity this is going to be a little crude. I understand if you would have us step outside for this little talk."

"Well Coal, darling...I too am a little curious. If it wouldn't be too much of a bother I would like to be informed as well."

"Alright ladies here goes nothing." I clear my throat and compose myself a little before starting. "Humans have to wear clothes because humans are much more exposed than ponies, and we are also a fair bit more perverted in all honesty. Ponies being quadrupeds and having tails to hide themselves makes the option of being well...nude a little less obscene. If I weren't wearing clothes right now, my...ehem...I would basically be in plain sight for all to see. As for the being more perverted comment...I don't know if that is really fair. Humans are just a lot easier to titillate with nudity. I can say that because every male pony I've seen today has been...in control, if you know what I mean." The girls nodded blushing a bit. "Despite the fact that all the mares I've seen have been nude as well. Humans wouldn't be able to control themselves like that. So there are enforced laws in place that force people to wear clothes. If only to protect us from ourselves."

"I see...that makes sense, but I can't help but find it a bit silly. I never really gave much thought to other ponies being nude. It just never bothered me."

Rarity had a much different opinion all together. "Darling that sounds absolutely marvelous!" Twilight and I looked at her confused. "If humans have to wear clothes all the time then there must be thousands of fashions! I would love to see some. Are the clothes you're wearing now fashionable where you come from Coal?"

"Oh no...not really. These are my work clothes. I was just getting off of work when I was brought to this world. I've never actually been much into fashion myself. If only because it is very

expensive and I didn't like going out much. I was a bit of a homebody."

"Oh that is a shame. I would of liked to of gotten some information on fashions from a different world." Rarity looked down a little disappointed.

"Don't worry Rarity, I may not be big into wearing fashion, but I know what is and is not fashionable in my world. I would be more than happy to answer any and all of questions about Earth fashion after I help you clean this place up. I'm not very tidy, but a mess of this caliber makes me feel a bit claustrophobic."

"Oh I know exactly what you mean darling! Well anyway Coal you have yourself a deal. I'll take you up on your offer of help and in return I'll make you some more clothes!"

"Thank you so much Rarity. It means a lot to me! I'm so happy right now I could just hug you! (me and my fucking mouth)"

Rarity blushed a little and turned her back to me before saying. "Well darling if you keep up that kind of talk I may just take you up on that." She then started cleaning up leaving Twilight and myself open mouthed and shocked.

We spent the next couple of hours cleaning up the Boutique. When 1:00 pm. came around we took a break for a late lunch. The girls had garden salads and I just had another apple. I had to explain to them that I didn't have what would be called 'healthy eating habits', and apples and other simple fruits were about all I could stand at the moment. They seemed to accept it without too much difficulty. After lunch we finished up the cleaning by three and we were exhausted!

"Oh Rarity" Twilight moaned (hawt). "I can't believe you have so much stuff! I'm sure glad it is all done and taken care of."

"Me too. Hey Twilight do you mind if I head back to the library for a shower? I'm sure I'm stinking you poor girls out."

"It isn't that bad darling. It sure isn't pleasant, but after all you've done I couldn't possibly give you a hard time about it. You may use my bathroom if you like darling."

"That is awfully nice of you Rarity. I think I'll take you up on your offer! Once I'm done and don't smell like an onion farm I'll give you that massage I owe ya." I said with a wink.

Rarity just laughed as I went towards the bathroom. I could hear Twilight make some kind of snarky comment, but didn't really catch it. I found the bathroom and quickly stripped, but before I could get in the shower I finally saw myself in the mirror. I didn't look anything like I did back on Earth. Well I kind of did, but...I was cartoonized is the only way to say it. I looked like I came from this world. I didn't have any skin problems and for whatever reason I was completely

hairless from the nose down. I usually had to shave twice a day, but it didn't look like I had a single day's worth of growth. I wasn't sure what all the teleport spell did to me or if it was just how this world worked, but I didn't mind. I did still have the few moles I've had from birth which made me happy. I may not miss all the zits and hair, but something you've had since birth just up and disappearing is kind of sad. I got tired of checking myself out in the mirror and jumped in the shower. I started the water and all my cares slowly started to melt away.

* * * *

"Oh Twilight! He is such a treat!" Rarity exclaimed.

"Shhhh keep it down. Coal is a pretty affectionate kind of guy. If he hears that he will probably start hugging you."

"Do you know this from experience darling?" Rarity gave Twilight a suggestive look. Twilight blushed beet red and turned her head. This only made Rarity all the more aggressive in her teasing. "Have you two gone further than hugging already Twilight? I had always thought that I would be the first to make it to mare hood, but my dear sweet innocent Twilight has been swept up off her hooves by a stranger from another world. Oh the excitement!" Twilight had stopped blushing and just gave Rarity a cold stare. "Oh come on Twilight! I'm just having some fun with you. If you can't tease your friends who can you?"

"*groan* I know Rarity. It's just that I'm already a little worried about how Coal looks at us as it is."

"Whatever do you mean Twilight?"

"The short answer is that Coal finds us attractive."

"What? He does? That is very nice of him, but that seems highly unusual! He is a different species after all."

"Yeah and he even talked to me about it. Apparently the females he has met are so unkind that when he started experiencing all this kindness from us he couldn't help himself. Something like that anyway."

"How dreadful! Well I for one am flattered that he thinks so highly of our character that he can overcome physical appearance with ease!"

"That's a really nice way to look at it Rarity. The only problem now though goes back to what he was saying about humans having to wear clothes. You know, to protect them from themselves..."

At Twilight reminding Rarity of this the two pieces of the puzzle were completed in her head. She took a deep breath and in almost a panicked voice completed Twilight's explanation. "So the problem is that Coal is attracted to us, and humans are very weak to well...nudity. And ponies being for the most part nude, you're worried he may lose himself and take advantage of you?"

"Something like that Rarity. I don't think Coal would do that, but I have only known him for a day now."

"I understand darling, but I don't think he would do that either. He has been nothing but pleasant since arriving here. Oh my! I just remembered! Coal said he only had one set of clothes. He won't want to get back in those dirty clothes of his. I better go up there and grab them so that I can clean them and get some rough measurements."

"Sounds like a plan Rarity. I'm going to take a little nap on your couch. I'm pooped!"

Rarity sauntered towards the bathroom, but stopped just outside the door. Coal was singing in the shower. Rarity couldn't understand the lyrics but the rhythm seemed nice enough. She tip hooped (lol) into the bathroom and spotted Coal's clothes. She was about to grab them when the shower stopped. She looked in a mixture of horror and curiosity as the curtain swung open revealing Coal in all his...glory?

"Ahhhh that was a nice shower." Coal rubbing the water out of his eyes started feeling around for his towel. His hand gently brushed against Rarity's mane and he froze. Coal slowly opened his eyes revealing a very red very big eyed mare looking right at his...dangly parts. He immediately closed the curtain to the shower and choked out. "Could you hand me my towel Rarity?"

Rarity snapped out of her daze and quickly levitated the towel into the shower. "Thank you Rarity...and umm...please don't be mad."

"I...I-I'm not darling. I b-b-better get going!" Rarity quickly ran out of the bathroom and down the stairs. She had completely forgotten about getting Coal's clothes. She skidded to a stop right in front of Twilight at the bottom of the stairs who had heard the commotion.

"Rarity? What is the matter? You look really flushed."

"Twi-tw-Twilight! I-I-I-I.....I walked in on Coal getting out of the shower!"

"YOU WHAT!?" Twilight's screamed with bulging eyes.

"It was an accident! I have never known any pony to take such quick showers!"

“So you...saw everything...didn't you?” Rarity just nodded. “I think I need to look up if there is a memory erase spell. Otherwise things are going to be really awkward.”

“They don't need to be Twilight.” Coal said coming down in his boxer shorts with the towel over his shoulders.

“Oh Coal I'm so sorry for walking in on you like that! I didn't mean to! I'm sure privacy is really important to you, but please don't be mad at me darling!”

“I'm not mad Rarity. Just a little embarrassed, and my pride is a little sore.”

“You don't have anything to be embarrassed about Coal.” Rarity said immediately regretting it. (HA I'M NOT THE ONLY ONE THAT DOES IT!)

For the first time in many years, Coal went red. A very hot, very deep red. If it were not for the fact that he didn't want to scare the girls, he would of probably passed out. Twilight during all of this was just holding her face in her hooves mortified.

“I'm sorry Coal! That came out absolutely awful!”

Coal raised his hand to silence Rarity. “It is alright Rarity. It definitely isn't an insult and it doesn't make me mad. It just makes me very embarrassed and that isn't anything new.”

“*GROAN* The both of you are making this so~ much more awkward than it needs to be! Rarity would you please at least wash Coal's old clothes, so he doesn't have to walk around dirty all over again!”

“Oh right of course Twilight! I'll be done in a jiffy!”

Random Quote: "Oh I'll feed you baby birds!" ~ Daniel Tosh

Chapter 8: Life is confusing...

Author's note: Writing for other characters is weird...that's all I got.

* * * *

Twilight and I sat in silence for what felt like hours. I was a little uncomfortable being half naked and all, but Twilight wasn't paying me any mind. She was off in her own little world thinking about who knows what. The silence was getting to me and I had to say something...anything!

“So um Twilight...would you mind telling me about those marks you and all the other ponies I've seen have?” I asked pointing to her flank.

“Those are called cutie marks. They appear when a pony finds out their special talent.”

“What does yours mean? (Like I even have to ask)”

“My special talent is magic. I assume my mark is a magic symbol. I’ve never seen it in my studies though.”

“That is really interesting. I’m sure you’ve already guessed, but humans don’t have those. We can get fake markings permanently engraved into our bodies called tattoos if we want though.”

Twilight perked up hearing this. “I thought you said humans don’t have magic. How can they do that?”

“We don’t have magic, but we have technology. The science behind a tattoo is that you take a sharp mechanical needle filled with ink and it basically stabs the skin while the tattoo artist draws on you. The end result is a picture of your choice forever engraved into your skin.”

“That sounds very painful. Why do humans go through that?”

“I’m told it hurts a bit, but nothing unbearable. Humans do it to either be rebellious and stupid or hopefully to express themselves. I have never wanted a tattoo myself. If only because I’ve never had anything important enough to carve into my body.”

Twilight and I talked a little longer about tattoos and in the process she got curious about some of our technologies. I figured I should tell her about vehicles; because for whatever reason she hadn’t asked me what a truck was during my story. She was very fascinated by it. I was about to start telling her about planes when Rarity came back with my clothes cleaned, dried, and pressed.

“Awww Rarity you didn’t have to go through so much trouble, but I really do appreciate all this!”

“Not at all darling. It is the least I can do.” after hoofing me my clothes Rarity sat down and started rubbing her neck. “I seem to have built up quite a lot of stress with this latest incident. Poor Aloe and Lotus are going to have a nightmare of a time trying to get me relaxed!”

“Hey now! That reminds me! I still owe you the massage. Why don’t you get comfortable Rarity and I’ll get started!”

Twilight and Rarity gave each other a little look, but I couldn’t tell what it meant.

“Is something the matter Rarity? I hope you’re not still concerned over seeing me naked. It doesn’t bother me anymore and I don’t want it to bother you.”

“No darling that isn’t it at all...just let me get comfortable.”

Rarity didn’t have a massage table of her own, so she sprawled out on the newly cleaned floor. I would have never guessed Rarity to do that, but I guess it having just been cleaned was all Rarity needed.

“I’m experienced when it comes to humans Rarity, but please don’t be afraid to tell me if you don’t like it, or if you would like me to do it differently. Your criticism is the only way I’ll get better!” (Hint to audience! 4th wall be dead now...)

Rarity gave a sheepish nod and looked up at me with pleading eyes. It was like she wanted me to do this, but at the same time was a little scared of the contact. I really wanted to do this though, so unless she said anything I was not going to hold back!

“Let me just prep myself Rarity.” I cracked the joints in my knuckles, neck, back, shoulders, wrists, you name it. It is a really bad habit of mine, but it helps me relax and concentrate. I think it freaked the girls out a little. Just because after having done it for so long; they are really loud when I pop them. They didn’t say anything though, so I got on my knees behind Rarity and laid my hands on her back.

“I’m going to take a moment to feel where the muscles in your back are Rarity. Then I’ll move on to the real massage.”

She just nodded and closed her eyes. I ran my hands gently over her shoulders and down her back. I moved them up along her sides and then back down to her hips. I put my hands on the back of her neck and gently felt the muscles in them. She was definitely stressed to some degree. Her muscles were very tense and if she weren’t so lean; she would probably look like she just got done doing some heavy lifting.

“You weren’t kidding when you said you were stressed Rarity. I think I have an idea of what to do now. I’m going to start applying pressure. If it is too much or not enough just let me now.”

She let out an 'alright' so quiet and timid it would of made Fluttershy seem loud.

I started at the base of her neck. I couldn’t tell you how much psi I applied, but it was enough to start feeling the stress disperse. My favorite technique is the kneading dough style. Where you apply constant pressure, but move the muscles in several different directions. I think Rarity was liking it because she was letting out soft moans when I would move on to a different spot on her body. I had to think of the nastiest, grossest junk you could imagine to prevent myself from giving her a lower massage if you know what I mean (not touching her with my hands, but with my...I think you get the idea now). Thankfully with my arms being as long as they are; it made keeping my lower half away from Rarity a lot easier. Twilight was watching intently with a

studious look. I assume she was curious what having a masseuse with fingers felt like. Since all Rarity was accustomed to was hooves. I went all over Rarity's back again and again. After a solid fifteen minutes I leaned in and asked her how she was feeling.

"I-I feel great Coal...this is wonderful." she said with a very sleepy voice.

With that compliment and boost to my ego I found the will and energy to turn it up a notch.

"Rarity, I'm going to switch to a deep tissue massage now. It is a lot slower and with a fair bit more pressure. If it starts to hurt please let me know."

"I will Coal...thank you so much."

I did a light run of my hands over her back to disperse the latest rubbings. I then started right above her tail with the deep pressure. I pushed in firmly, but evenly along her thighs slowly working my way up her back. As I moved up her spine she opened her mouth and let out the sexiest damn moan I have ever heard! I swear to god! Twilight was looking really uncomfortable. She was twitching a little as she watched us. I didn't pay her too much mind. This was time for Rarity, and I was going to make her feel good! I kept up the pressure moving up and around her shoulders and around her collar bone. I was slowly moving up her neck when she shot up! It was so sudden that I yelped falling back onto my ass. She gave me one horrified look and ran upstairs without saying a word.

"What just happened?" was all I could say.

* * * *

"I think you should wait here Coal. I'll go see what's wrong with Rarity."

"Thanks Twilight, that's probably for the best. I really hope I didn't hurt her..."

"I don't think so Coal, but I can't say anything for sure yet."

"Hey Twilight I'm actually going to head back to the library now. It's already after six and I should probably give Rarity her space at the moment."

"I understand Coal. I'll let you know what happened when I get home tonight."

With that Coal left the Boutique and made his way back to the library. Twilight on the other hoof had to figure out what just happened. She wasn't looking forward to it for some reason. She made her way up the stairs and could hear Rarity whimpering in the bathroom.

"Rarity? Are you alright? What happened?"

"Please just leave, I don't want Coal to see me like this!"

"He left Rarity. He thought you probably wanted your space."

"Oh I hope I didn't offend him! I just couldn't take it anymore!"

Twilight opened the bathroom door to see Rarity sitting on the toilet with her face in her hooves.
"Was the massage that bad Rarity? You seemed like you were enjoying it..."

"No Twilight it wasn't anything like that. I...I just....ooh it's soooo embarrassing Twilight! I don't think I can say it!"

"It's Ok Rarity, I won't force you to if you're uncomfortable. Its just that Coal was really concerned he did something wrong."

"Oh not at all darling. In fact he was doing everything right!"

"What?" Twilight was looking very confused now.

"That was the best massage I have ever gotten! That Coal could make a fortune selling his services!"

"Then why did you run off like that?"

Rarity looked away from Twilight and wiped a tear off that had formed at the corner of her eye.
"Promise you won't laugh or judge me?"

"Oh Rarity of course I won't! You're my best friend!"

"Thank you Twilight you're mine too. *sigh*...I got excited."

"You what!?"

"I got excited, Twilight..."

Twilight fell on her flank looking at Rarity.

"Now please don't give me that look Twilight! He was doing everything right! I have never felt that good before. I started thinking about what it would feel like to have him...I just couldn't take it anymore! I didn't want Coal to realize how dirty I was being!" Rarity looked at Twilight with a pleading face. "Please don't tell Coal! I wouldn't be able to ever face him again!"

"I-I won't tell him Rarity. Cross my heart hope to fly stick a cupcake in my eye!"

"Thank you darling. I should probably apologize to Coal..."

"It's alright Rarity. I'll just tell him that in your relaxed state you remembered something urgent you had to do. I don't think he'll ask anything further about it."

"Thank you Twilight *sniffle* you're the best."

Twilight and Rarity shared a warm hug before Twilight decided it was best to head home as well.

"Before I leave Rarity, do you know when Spike should be back?"

"I'm afraid I don't dear, but Sweetie Belle knows to be back before nine. So if Spike comes back with her I'll send him home."

"Thanks, I hope you have a good night Rarity!"

Twilight gave Rarity a wave goodbye which she returned. Twilight then made her way back to the library.

* * * *

"What a day~!" I groaned. "Today was awesome up until I freaked out Rarity somehow. Sorry Spike, but she is supa hawt! Hell yeah hawtness! Can I get yo numba? What's that? Ya aint got no phones!? Why da hell not? Ooooooh no fingers that's right.....what the hell just happened?" It had only been a couple of days since the last time I freaked out like that. It always used to make me laugh how I would just randomly go on a tangent every now and then, but now that I'm in Equestria it seriously weirded me out!

On my way back I passed several more ponies who all gave me curious stares. There didn't seem to be a lot of fear though. I figured that some of the other ponies that I met earlier may have gotten the word around that I'm living here and not dangerous. I was enjoying the lack of fear when I was suddenly tackled to the ground!

"OhmyGawd! What just happened!?" My vision clears and I see Dash right on top of me laughing her heart out. I would have been pissed if it weren't for the fact she looked so damn cute!

"Bwahahahahaha Coal! You should of seen the look on your face!" Dash continued to laugh for a couple more minutes.

I don't much care to be the punch line for jokes, so I decided to turn the tables on her. I grab her and pull her into the biggest hug I had ever given. My arms came back around to my back it was

so big!

“Hey, come on Coal! You gotta stop hugging me like this! Let go!”

“I don’t think I should Dashie. I haven’t seen you since the other night and I was worried. I think you owe me this hug!”

Dash stopped fidgeting and looked at me. She had such a look of hurt and regret on her face. It made me go cold with just how sad it was. I also started to feel very guilty...

“Sorry about that Coal...I just don’t like others to see me like that. It makes me feel weak and I don’t like it. I’m supposed to be awesome! Not some vulnerable mare!”

“There isn’t anything wrong with crying when you’re sad Dashie. It didn’t make you weak to cry, and honestly it made me kind of happy. I know that sounds bad, but you were crying for me! I’ve never had that before. I didn’t like seeing you sad, but it really did make me feel cared about.”

“Oh come on Coal; please don’t get all mushy on me! *sniffle* You’re gonna make me cry again...”

“Heheh sorry Dashie.” I let her go and she flaps her wings a bit landing next to me.

“Your wings are already healed!? That is pretty stinking amazing! It has only been one day! How did that happen?”

“It wasn’t that bad Coal. They were just bruised is all, and I know this zebra named Zecora who has plenty of healing potions and salves!”

“Wow! That is really awesome! I’m glad you’re all better! I really want to see you fly!”

Dash gave me a huge smile and said: “You got it Coal! I’m going to blow you away! (fuck my dirty ass mind)”

Dash started going through what I assumed to be her routine. She did spins and flips, she rotated the clouds and broke through others. She kept going faster and faster almost to the point where I couldn’t follow her anymore! I was really hoping she would end with a sonic rainboom, but it didn’t happen. She made this huge flash of light appear by bucking at a cluster of clouds she grouped together. I wasn’t sure, but I think that was the Buccaneer Blaze.

“Wow Dashie! You are awesome!”

“Tell me something I don’t know!”

I got a devilish smirk on my face. "You look really hot when you fly!" I yelled out.

"What!?" she fell about four feet to the ground with a soft thud. She landed on her flank not sure of what to say.

"Hahahahhahhaaahahahah!!!" I burst out laughing and couldn't contain myself. I laughed for a solid three minutes before finally calming down. Dash did not look pleased in the slightest. "Oh lighten up Dashie! I had to get you back for scaring me earlier!"

Dash sighed and started laughing a bit herself. "Yeah I guess you did! You've been so serious since you got here. I didn't know you could make jokes like that."

"Oh I wasn't joking Dashie." Her jaw dropped and I started laughing all over again! This time she wasn't having none of it. She jumped up on top of me and stuck her hoof in my mouth (kinky?).

"No more of that! Geez Coal! Once you start laughing it is really hard to get you to stop!"

I was still chuckling a bit, but had calmed down enough for Dash to remove her hoof from my mouth.

"Oh Dashie...you're really fun ya know that?" I looked deeply in her eyes as I said it. She went a little red and started to turn away, but looked back giving me a soft smile.

"Thanks Coal...you too. So tell me...what are you doing out of the library? I figured you'd be the kind of guy to try and lay low for a while. Don't tell me we snuck around Ponyville the other day for nothing!"

"I had Twilight with me earlier, we were going to lightly introduce me to the community by walking around a bit. The original plan was to have Twilight introduce me to your other three friends. Pinkie Pie, Rarity, and Applejack in that order. And then seeing if I couldn't get a job at Applejack's farm. We couldn't find Pinkie and ended up getting caught up with Rarity all day! Spike filled me in about them pretty thoroughly though. I was really looking forward to meeting Pinkie. She sounds like a blast!"

"Haha yeah, Pinkie is something else." Dash had a beaming smile on her face when talking about Pinkie. I know that a lot of the fans think Dash is a lesbian, or just that they like to...but I really hope not! If she is then I don't stand a chance! What!? If you were in my position you would work for it too! Don't you judge me!

"Are you and Pinkie really close?" I ask hoping to have my fears of not having a chance with Dash put to rest.

"She is a good friend of mine. After I left the library yesterday I hooked up with her and we went

out to pull some pranks! It was a great way to cheer up after that story of yours. She can cheer up any pony as long as they don't fight it."

"It must be nice to have a friend like that. Whelp..." I say getting up off the ground. "...hopefully she'll be my friend too."

Dash and I just let out a contented sigh. She stayed with me all the way to the library.

"Well I better get out of here Coal. It was nice seeing you again!"

"I feel the same way Dashie! We have to hang out some time. Anyway have a good evening!" I waved goodbye as Dash took off into the evening sky.

"Man I love that pony..." I turn to open the door, but find Spike giving me the biggest shit eating grin I had ever seen! "You heard that...didn't you?"

"Eeeeyup" The humor was not lost on me, but I was too mortified to care.

"You're not going to tell her I said that...are you?" I was actually pretty damn scared. If there is one thing I've learned since being here; it's that words have a lot more power here than they do on Earth.

"Naw man. Your secret is safe with me!"

Spike and I head inside and we start talking about how our days went. Spike told me about the fight Rarity had with her colt friend, and then about how he and the CMC spent the whole day trying different ways to get their cutie marks. He also told me a bit about Scootaloo, Sweetie Belle, and Applebloom. He was going to tell me about cutie marks, but I stopped him explaining how Twilight already had. I then told him about my day at Rarity's. I left out the whole bathroom incident, but he still gave me a sour look at the massage part.

"I don't know what I did wrong Spike! I thought I was helping; she seemed to be enjoying it for the most part. Then just gets up and runs off! It was really disheartening."

Spike twirls a gemstone he has in his claws a few times before nodding in understanding. "I hear ya Coal. Mares ya know? Tough living with em, sucks to be without em."

"Is that a saying here Spike? Cause we have something similar on Earth."

"Well the normal saying is Mares: can't live with them, can't live without them. I just don't think that is too fair is all. What's Earth's saying?"

"Same thing, but with women instead of mares. I understand what you mean about the

unfairness too. Let me tell you Spike...I'm very Ok with these feelings I have. It makes me feel LOADS BETTER knowing that I'm not the only guy to fall for a girl outside his own species." I gave Spike a playful nudge in the shoulder. Spike and I shared a good laugh.

"So Spike...what are dragons like here? They're just a myth in my world, but they are never very friendly."

"Just myths huh? Well in all honesty that is probably for the best. Dragons can be pretty mean! I once wound up in this dragon's cave on accident, and he totally tried to kill me!"

"That's messed up bro! (I'm getting into a bro bro relationship with an eight year old dragon.....oh fuck the hell yes!) How did you end up getting away?"

"Twilight and Owliscious saved me!"

"Owl...who? (still pretending remember? It ain't stopping so get used to it!)"

"Owliscious! He is Twilight's pet owl. I didn't like him at first, but he has grown on me. I'm not sure where he is though. He seems to come and go as he pleases."

"So he is kinda like a cat then..."

"NO WAY! Have you seen Rarity's cat? That thing is a menace! She is so stinking mean! Thankfully Fluttershy was grooming her today; otherwise I wouldn't of been able to stand the Boutique with the cat and that jerk of a colt. I'm glad Rarity broke it off with him. I hope she isn't sad about it."

"Don't worry about it Spike. Like I said earlier; she was stressed, but seemed to be taking it really well. I'm not sure how I would react if my special someone turned out to be a jerk!"

"Well lucky for you Rainbow stole your heart! She is a pretty awesome pony!"

"Ya mind keeping that down Spike!? I really don't want any pony to hear that! Besides I really meant that to be more platonic. I'm definitely attracted to her, but by that same token I'm attracted to all the other mares I've met. I haven't gotten to know a single nasty pony since I've been here. I can't count Rarity's ex-colt friend because I only saw him. I didn't get to talk with him."

"Platonic? What is that?"

"That is when you love someone or some pony in a non romantic way. I'm not saying I couldn't love Dashie in that way; I'm just saying that we don't know each other well enough for that. (BULLSHIT!)"

"Ooooh, that's cool. Nothing to be embarrassed about there really. You just really like her as friend right now. I can understand that."

"Has any pony ever told you that you're really unbelievably mature for your age? I swear I feel like you could be one of my old school chums from Junior High!"

"Heh thanks Coal, but it is really just a dragon thing. The same with ponies. We just mature faster I guess. I mean Twilight and the others are nearly full grown. I've got a few more years before I start growing a lot."

"They're nearly full grown!?! Sheesh! I'm not even full grown yet! I'm close, but not quiet."

"What!? How much bigger are you going to get Coal!?"

"Not that much taller, but it runs in my family that the men are pretty scrawny until they get to be anywhere from twenty to twenty-five."

"Wow, not to be mean or anything Coal, but you seem like you're the same age as Twilight or her friends."

"No offense taken Spike. I honestly try pretty hard to hold onto my youthful ways. Life was hard enough back home as it was. I tried to keep myself pretty laid-back in order to deal with everything better. It helped a bit. Besides, age isn't all that important to me. You and Twilight and every pony I've met have been smart, and really nice. I don't care that I'm older as long as none of you don't."

"No way Coal! I'm glad you're my friend. It doesn't matter to me one bit!"

* * * *

Twilight was on her way back to the library when she heard some pony calling to her. "Hey Twi! Ah need ta' talk to ya!"

"Oh hello Applejack! What seems to be the problem?"

"It's all over town Twi! That you got some kinda creature livin' with ya! Ah was mighty worried 'bout ya' is all!"

"Hehe, you don't need to be worried about it Applejack. If we hadn't gotten so busy with Rarity today you would of gotten to meet him this afternoon."

"We? him? Who is this feller?"

"His name is Coal and he is a human from Earth. He is really nice, and has been getting along great with every pony he has met. You and Pinkie Pie are the only friends of mine he has yet to be introduced to."

"Well Ah'll be. Ah don't know how Ah feel 'bout this feller yet, but iff'n ya'll say he is nice Ah'll believe ya'!"

"He was actually really looking forward to meeting you today Applejack. You see he is looking for work, and your farm peaked his interest. He also told me that Spike informed him about you. He says you sound a lot like the nice country girls that his planet used to have."

"That's mighty fine of him! Ah'm looking forward ta' meetin' him too! Ah can't say fer certain that Ah can hire em though...Ah'd have ta' get ah good look at em first!"

"I think he'll be more than happy to hear that! I can't say for sure what kind of a worker he is...he is a bit scrawny. If only because he is soo tall."

"Well how tall is he?"

"He is at least as tall as princess Celestia if not taller."

"Land sakes! Is that normal for his kind?"

"I don't know Applejack...I haven't really talked with him about his people all that much. He...what I mean is...what he has told me about humans only leads me to believe he doesn't like them very much."

"But ain't he ah human? Why would he not like his own kind?"

"He can explain that better than I can. I'm sure we'll be seeing you at the farm tomorrow. Coal doesn't seem to mind answering any question tossed his way. It is actually kind of refreshing really."

"Well alrighty Twi! I'll be seein' ya tomorrow then!"

"Good night Applejack!"

With that Twilight and Applejack went their separate ways back to their respective homes. Twilight came home to find Coal fast asleep with Spike on his belly. She giggled at the sight and levitated a blanket over the two. Tomorrow was going to be a great day; she could just feel it!

Author's note: I'm going to have to add a new tag for the next post...yeah...I'm not gonna say

what, but...I think ya'll can figure it out...

Chapter 9: The Nightmare

Author's notes: Ok guys...this chapter...this damn chapter, it deserves a lot of explanation. Long story short, the following is a REAL dream I had once. When I decided to start writing a HiE story using myself as a template, I HAD to put this dream in there somewhere. It is...so very different from everything before it...just...just god, but don't worry. It does serve a purpose in the story.

* * * *

"Wha?...Where am I?" I looked all around to find that I was not only a lone, but nowhere I had ever seen. "The fuuuuu? Did Twilight cast another spell? OH SHIT! I BETTER NOT BE IN TRANSITION BACK TO EARTH! That would suck sooo much ass!!!"

I was starting to freak out, and when I freak out I of course make smart decisions! I started running as fast as I could in any random direction. As I ran, parts of Ponyville kept coming into detail around me. It was like a pop-up book where every time you turn the page more is revealed. I didn't stop running though; everything looked dark and unnatural. I kept running until I saw Sugarcube Corner. I dashed straight through the front door nearly taking it off of it's hinges!

"Hello!? Is any pony there!" I yelled frantically trying to find anything! I hadn't seen a soul the entire run and I was scared out of my mind. It was then that I saw a little bit of movement coming from around an open doorway to the left of some stairs. Being the genius that I am, I decided it was best to investigate.

The doorway led to a staircase that looked like it went over a hundred feet under the surface. I really should of been questioning what the hell was going on, but I was just too scared to do something rational like think. I made my way down the dark staircase ever so slowly. It got darker and danker the further down I went. Before I even reached the bottom I felt something hit the back of me with great force and I'm thrown down the rest of the staircase into another room.

I groan with this new found pain in my back. I thankfully didn't land on my neck otherwise this little investigation would of ended rather prematurely. I stayed on the floor for several minutes with my eyes forced closed in the pain. I could hear movement, but I couldn't bring myself out of my own stupor to acknowledge it. Finally after a couple more minutes I worked up enough strength to open my eyes...I wish I hadn't!

Standing all around me were the girls. There was Twilight, Pinkie Pie, Fluttershy, Applejack, Rarity, and Rainbow Dash. I wanted to say something, but they were all looking at me like I was some horrible monster. I never thought I could be scared of such cute creatures in all my life,

but boy was I wrong. Their faces were dripping of hate and malice. I was on the verge of tears at this point. Being hurt is one thing, being scared is one thing; but having the girls you love more than anything look at you with such hate is something else entirely.

"G-g-girls?" was all I could force out before they started attacking. Twilight used her magic to force me down and splayed me across the floor. Applejack and Rainbow Dash went to my legs, Fluttershy and Rarity went to my arms, and Pinkie Pie stood right on my chest. They had this wicked grin plastered onto their faces; I had never seen anything that looked so evil.

I was sweating furiously and couldn't get a single sound out. I couldn't whine, cry, groan, what have you. All I could do was stare as they each started stomping my limbs and chest into oblivion. They worked fast and in perfect unison. They would each rear back on their hind legs and come down hard with their fronts. It only took a single wave to completely shatter the bones they made contact with. When Pinkie came down she knocked all the wind out of me. I couldn't scream out even though I desperately tried. Twilight released her magic knowing that I couldn't resist at this point. She stood right behind me and leaned in so that our faces were inches apart. She didn't have a smile on her face, but a look of satisfaction. She started licking the tears off of my cheeks and seemed to be savoring them as if they were a fine candy.

I had completely given up any hope at this point. With what little mind I had left; I resigned myself to death. Thankfully I had gone into shock I think, because I wasn't in any physical pain at this point. I looked at each of the girls as they moved away from me leaving Twilight behind. She took Pinkie's place on my chest and looked at me intently. She leaned in and put her mouth right next to my ear and for the first time any of the girls spoke.

"You're mine now Coal.....I'm going to enjoy our time together."

It was her same sweet if not a little overly critical voice. I couldn't help myself; I started crying all over again. The sweet ponies that I had fallen in love with were systematically breaking my will to resist and live. She lapped up each and every tear that fell with gusto. Her face was one of pure delight when the tears just kept coming. It was like each tear made her feel orgasmic. She started moaning as she continued to enjoy these salty treats before her. I couldn't take it anymore; I forced my tears to stop; much to her displeasure. I then said the only thing I could think of.

"Why? I loved you girls...please...p-please just end this!" Her smile grew ear to ear. She motioned for the other girls to return and she levitated my broken body onto a wooden board against the wall. My head fell low as I realized they weren't stopping any time soon. I was broken. I didn't care anymore. All I wanted was for death to take hold of me. I stuck my tongue out of my mouth and with what little strength I had left; bit it clean off. Blood poured out of my mouth and pooled at my feet. The girls whined at the loss of their fun. As my vision began to fade, I looked up and saw each girl making their way towards me. Thankfully darkness took hold before I could see more.

* * * *

"Aaaaugh! Ahhhhhhh!" I yelled

"Twilight! Hold him down!"

"He is thrashing too much Spike!"

"Don't you have some kind of spell to hold him in place!?"

"It takes too long to prepare; he is really going to hurt himself!"

"Huh? what?" I awoke violently to find myself surrounded by piles of fallen books, and to see Twilight and Spike looking at me with great deals of concern.

"Spike...Twilight...wha-what is going on? I w-was dieing and..." I trailed off as I realized to my horror that I had been dreaming this entire time. I looked up at my friends' worried faces. "I-I-I'm so sorry!" was all that came out.

Spike sighed and then calmly sat down beside me trying to cool off. Twilight on the other hand got right up to me and started nuzzling my chest with her cheek.

"Coal...are you alright?" She asked looking at me with such a tender expression.

"I think I'll leave you two a lone for a little bit. I'm going to go start on breakfast." Spike said as he got up leaving us.

"I-I think so Twilight. I'm so sorry for this! I can't believe my dreaming could be so violent!" I had apparently been thrashing for some time now. I looked around the now horribly messy room and stopped when I realized that my entire body was covered in a cold sweat. It was a disgusting feeling. It was sticking to my clothes and felt like it had glued them to my skin.

"I'll help clean up Twilight. I...I'm so sorry." I started to get up when Twilight forced me back down.

"You will do no such thing!" After that dream I just had; hearing Twilight yell like that really scared me. "I won't make you tell me what you were dreaming Coal, but you need your rest. I want you to go take a shower, and after that if you want to talk about it, we can." She said in a very nurturing, but at the same time demanding way.

I nodded in agreement and she got off of me. I stood up looking at the damage I had done. Nothing too serious, but there were so many books knocked off of their shelves. It would take hours to get them all sorted back properly. I thanked Twilight and went towards her bathroom for

a much needed shower.

* * * *

"Geez Twilight...what in Equestria do you think he was seeing?" Spike asked still working on breakfast.

"I have no idea Spike, but whatever it was really scared him." Twilight poured some water on her hooves and wiped her face. "I don't think I have ever seen some pony so scared. I told him that if he wanted to talk about it I would listen, but I'm not sure I want to know..."

"I hear you there Twilight! Who knows what it takes to scare a human!"

Spike and Twilight sat in silence for a few minutes until Coal came into the kitchen wrapped in a towel.

"Thanks again Twilight, Spike; sorry I've been such a horrid house guest." Coal said looking down trodden.

"Coal...you are not a horrid house guest. You had a nightmare...a really bad one from what I can tell." Twilight put her hoof on Coal to reassure him. Coal gave her a sincere but half hearted smile. "Do you want to talk about it Coal?"

"I-I don't think I should..." Coal pulled Twilight in close and held her tightly. "I know you're not too keen on hugs Twilight, but...it will make me feel worlds better...if you don't mind." Twilight buried her face into Coal's chest and returned the gesture seemingly unperturbed. After a minute Coal broke the embrace and rubbed Twilight's head saying: "Thanks Twilight...I couldn't ever ask for a better friend."

"Ok now that the mushy stuff is over; why don't you two get some food!" Spike interjected making Twilight turn a deep crimson.

The three friends spent the next hour slowly enjoying their meal. It then came time to clean up the mess that Coal had made through the night. "I really did a number on this place..." Coal remarked looking around. "I didn't accidentally hurt either of you did I?"

"No Coal, Spike and I are fine. It was pretty hard keeping you from thrashing around though. Whatever you were seeing must have been terrifying!"

"Yeah...yeah it was, but it's over now and I'm ready for a much better day to take my mind off of it!"

Twilight started levitating books back into their upright positions and directing Coal on what he

could do. Spike already knew where everything went, so it was mostly Coal's job to just bring Spike whatever book he called for. With the three of them working on it the project was finished in just a couple hours.

"Whew! Glad that is done and over with!" Coal exclaimed with a new look of peace on his face.

"You're telling me!" Spike whined "It was a lot easier with you here though Coal. And again don't feel bad about it. Twilight makes bigger messes herself whenever she gets busy studying!"

Twilight shot him a dirty look, but quickly hid her face when she noticed Coal staring.

"Is there something on my face Coal?" Twilight asked looking a little uncomfortable.

"Huh? Oh! No! Sorry! I was just thinking about how lucky I am."

Twilight and Spike looked at each and then back to Coal like they were waiting for an explanation. Coal just laughed.

"You two are really funny you know that!? I swear every time I say something it demands an explanation! I'm lucky because one: Twilight saved my life, two: I have made let's see...one, two, three, four, five good friends in only two days. I have already made a jerk out of myself plenty of times and yet all of my new friends don't seem to mind too much. I've been given a temporary place to stay with said friends and despite the fact that I have probably scared the living day lights out of you two; you forgive me as if it never happened!" Coal couldn't contain himself anymore and scooped up Twilight and Spike bringing them into a big group hug. "You are the best friends a guy could ever want!"

"Augh Coal, you're kinda squishing me!" Spike forced out.

"Ooops sorry!" Coal set them both down and immediately started laughing. He couldn't take it; he was just so happy. It didn't take long before Twilight and Spike caught the chuckle bug and burst out laughing themselves. They laughed rolling on the floor for a good several minutes before finally calming down.

Chapter 10: Meeting the Apples

"Thanks guys! I really needed that!" I was feeling so much better already.

"Hey don't mention it bro! That's what friends are for! (man Spike is cool)"

"Well we better head out Coal. I ran into Applejack last night and she is expecting us."

"Seriously!? That is awesome! What are we waiting for? Let's do this! (I am very very sorry that I

am not sorry for what I'm about to do) LEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEROOOOOOOOOOOOOY..." I screamed running out of the door! I didn't make it far before I was on the ground again laughing my ass off! I seriously tried, but I couldn't pull that off with a straight face! A couple minutes later Twilight walks out and looks at me like I'm crazy.

"What was that!?" She asks looking slightly amused by my antics.

"That my dear Twilight is an Earth joke. It would take waaay too long to explain, so just trust me when I say it was really funny for me!" (I am such a nerd)

She and I share another laugh and made our way to Sweet Apple Acres. On the way we pass several more ponies that again stopped and stared, but didn't look all that scared. I did however hear 'The horror! The horror!' a second time and I couldn't help myself.

"I don't know who keeps saying that, but give me a break! I'm not THAT ugly!"

Twilight just chuckles and I think some of the other ponies did too. After that the ponies went back about their business not paying me much mind. I was happy that I was already being accepted, but I kinda missed the attention. Which is weird as hell for me!

We walk for a while (I was enjoying the scenery so I didn't pay much attention to time) before coming to the edge of Sweet Apple Acres.

"Here we are Coal! Do you think I should give Applejack another heads up before you head down?"

"Nawww, I'm fine Twilight. Better to get the hard part over with. Besides, I'm a little worried that with too much warning; you may end up overselling me!"

Twilight giggled a little (man I'm loving this so much!). We walked down the dirt path in search of Applejack. We decided to check the barn first. When we got close though we heard a soft gasp coming from inside. I saw a big red bow duck back inside the barn (I sense a cuteness in the force).

"Is that you Applebloom? You don't need to be scared. This is Coal. He is really nice! (awwww I love you so much Twilight!)

Applebloom stuck her head back out of the barn not too sure of what Twilight had said. She eyed me up and down before slowly shuffling out of the barn and up to Twilight. There is a heart attack in the near future if this level of cuteness doesn't fall soon!

"Hi...Ah'm Applebloom...it's nice ta' meet ya..." She was trying to be friendly, but was still hiding a little behind Twilight.

"It is absolutely wonderful to meet you too Applebloom. Forgive me for being so forward on our first meeting, but you have to be the cutest thing I have ever seen! And I've met Fluttershy!"

Applebloom giggled a little at the joke (I was only half joking. Fluttershy is the most adorable mare ever, but you can't compare her to a little filly. It is a whole different kind of cute)

"I don't know why I'm still surprised at you Coal." Twilight gave me an 'Oh you' kind of face. It made me smile.

I kneeled down beside Applebloom and patted her head a little before saying: "So Applebloom...have you seen Applejack around? I haven't gotten to meet her yet."

Applebloom had been rubbing my hand a little enjoying the touch (I think I just lost fifty years of my life. Words can not express the joy that I felt in my heart!); she then leaned back breaking the contact and said: "Ah think she's in the apple orchard somewhere. Ah haven't seen her since breakfast."

"Thank ya kindly Applebloom! Ah'll check it out!" I exclaimed standing up. A second later I realize what I've just done and face palmed.

Twilight and Applebloom were giving me a weird look.

"You didn't just make fun of Applebloom's accent...did you Coal?" Twilight asked not sure of what to think.

"What!? No of course not. It's just that I used to have a bit of an accent myself. Where I come from though you get made fun of a lot for having what we call a southern err maybe a western accent, I dunno. Anyway, I worked really hard to get it out of my system. Hearing it come from Applebloom just made me kind of lapse back into my old ways."

"That's awful! Ah couldn't handle being treated like that! There are ah couple ah fillies in mah class that make fun of me already! Ah know it ain't fun Coal."

"You're a sweetheart Applebloom, but don't do what I did. Your accent is so charming; it is a part of who you are. Even if they're mean to you, don't let them change you! Tell you what...I want you to think of me as your go to guy for anything that's bugging ya! I've got a lot of experience when it comes to that stuff and I know just what it takes to make ya feel better!"

Applebloom gave me a big smile and jumped up into my arms. She gave the sweetest little hug I have ever gotten.

"Thank ya Coal! Ah'll remember ya said that!" She then hopped down and waved us goodbye as we set out in search for Applejack.

"You're pretty good with kids Coal."

"My mom ran a home day-care while I was growing up. There would be on any given day three to five children from the ages of two to five running about, so I got used to them. I don't know how old Applebloom is, but if I had to compare her to the developmental level of a human....she would probably be ten maybe older. It's kinda hard to say because as human children get older they tend to get a lot nastier and Applebloom was just a doll."

"Applebloom is seven if I'm remembering correctly and she is definitely a good filly. She is a bit of a hassle though. She and her friends get in a lot of trouble trying to get their cutie marks."

"Spike told me a bit about it. As long as they aren't getting hurt or putting themselves in danger I don't have a problem with it. If Sweetie Belle and Scootaloo are as cute as Applebloom; they could probably break every bone in my body and I wouldn't even be able to look angrily at them. I would just be like OW! I am in so much pain! But you are all so cute! AAAUUUGH MIXED EMOTIONS!!!"

Twilight giggled at my silliness (there are other forms of laughing, but Twilight's giggle is too cute; I am ok with this). We got back to searching for Applejack in the orchard for a little while. We eventually came up on some loud thumping noises. I assumed it was Applejack bucking, but I didn't say anything. I do have to keep up an act remember? Then it hit me. "Oh shit! Applejack is the element of honesty! What if she sees through my act! Play it cool Coal. She has no reason to suspect anything of you...except that you're a creature she has never seen before who doesn't want to go back to its original world, FUCK!"

"Hey Applejack! We're here!" Twilight was clearly excited. I'm sure what they talked about last night must of been good. This was the first time I had butterflies when meeting a new pony...well sort of new. Applejack and Rainbow Dash constantly struggled to be my favorite back home. This may sound bad, but I had to eventually compare them in every manner I could think. That includes the umm...physical attraction...I'm still not sure which I prefer. THEY ARE ALL JUST SO DAMN AWESOME! FUCK MY LIFE THEY ARE AWESOME!

"Howdy there Twi! Lemme just finish up this here tree and Ah'll meet this friend of yers!" Applejack expertly bucked a tree and all the apples fell neatly into their buckets. Applejack nodded in satisfaction before heading our way.

"Hopefully he'll be your friend too Applejack! (I certainly hope so)" Twilight yelled back.

Applejack was yawning a bit as she came up to us. She looked pretty tired. She brought a hoof to her eyes and rubbed them a bit before finally get a good look at me. She was surprised, that goes without saying; but she didn't look fearful like the others did their first time.

"Hi Applejack! It is very nice to meet you! My name is Coal!" I exclaim and reaching my hand out offering her a shake.

"Mighty fine ta' meetcha Coal!" Applejack grabs my hand with both hooves and shakes vigorously. It's a good thing I have long arms otherwise I would of been shaken up and down like a rag doll.

"Good heavens you're a strong girl AJ!...do you mind if I call you that?"

"Not at all Coal; only some of mah friends ever call me that. It's a mighty welcome nickname. And thank yah kindly for the compliment. I'm mighty proud of this strength of mine!" Applejack let go of my hand and gave me a big smirk.

"I can understand why! You're probably as strong as the ponies we have back in my world, yet you're so much smaller than they are. It is honestly very impressive!"

"Ya'll have ponies where yer from? What are they like?"

"Oh well ummm, they aren't anything like the ponies here. They are very lovely creatures, but they aren't nearly as smart as you are. There are also no unicorns or pegasus ponies where I'm from. They are all what you would call earth ponies I guess."

"I didn't know you knew about the different kinds of ponies here Coal. Did Spike tell you about them?" Twilight interjected.

"No he didn't...I just kinda took a guess. You wouldn't call earth ponies just ponies, cause that could refer to any pony. I thought of a few different things they could be called. Like ground ponies, dirt ponies, land ponies, but they all sounded a little...off. Then I thought back to what land creatures are called back home. They are called the 'creatures of the earth', so I settled on earth ponies. I thought it had a nice ring to it. (SAFE!)"

"Wow Coal...that is very impressive. Were you a scholar back home?" Twilight was looking at me with a bit of admiration. I felt so bad lying the way I was, but there was no going back now.

"Naw...I always felt I was smart enough. I just occasionally have moments of awesomeness like that you could say. No big deal really."

Twilight looked a little disappointed. "Well alright Coal, but that's not why we're here. You've gotten a good look at him now Applejack. Do you think he can be of any use here on your farm?"

Realizing that Twilight must of mentioned my potential employment to Applejack, I quickly put all of my focus on her. She was inspecting me up and down. She walked around me and poked at

my legs a little bit. She then asked me to flex a little. I would be lying if I said I didn't feel a bit...scared. She was inspecting me so intently. I felt like a piece of fruit someone is inspecting for bruises. She gives me a few more looks before sighing and shaking her head.

"Is something the matter AJ? I know I'm pretty scrawny, but I can definitely work!" I was a little bit insulted.

"It ain't nothing like that Coal. Ah just can't tell what kind of ah body ya have. Ah ain't ever seen ah human before. Would ya mind giving us ah look at yer strength?"

"I'll try. My arms are pretty weak compared to my legs. I guess if I was going to impress it would have to be something using those."

Applejack tapped her face with her hoof a bit before stating: "In that case, how 'bout ya kick ah few apple trees? That'll give me ah good idea of what ya can do."

"Sounds good to me AJ! Where should I start?"

She brought Twilight and I over to the trees next to the one she was working on when we found her. They had all of their apples hanging from their branches looking pristine and delicious! Now I'm definitely not the strongest wrench in the box, but I have taken a few Tae Kwon Do classes in my youth. So I at the very least know a few good kicks.

"There are three possible ways I can make this work AJ. If the first two don't work then I'm probably going to need a shoulder pad."

Twilight and Applejack gave me a curious look but didn't say anything. Applejack just nodded and wished me luck.

"Here goes nothing!" I started by going into the prep stance I was taught and did a step step behind side kick. It made a pleasant thud when connecting to the tree, but it only knocked out about half the apples. I was still plenty pleased with it.

"Hmmm...not good enough. Time for plan B!" I walked over to another tree that had all of it's apples; I stood with my back to it and was facing Twilight and Applejack. They were watching me intently. I yell out "Hiyut!" as I lift up my right leg and deliver a back kick to the base of the tree. More apples fell out this time, but there were still a few hanging there. "Drat! I was hoping that would work!" Applejack was about to say something when I stopped her. "No no AJ! I still have one more option. I can probably do it a few times without padding. Just to give you an idea of what it is."

Applejack closed her mouth and continued to watch me intently. I spotted a third tree a few yards away with some baskets under it. I did my usual cracking of joints ritual followed by some

brief stretching. Twilight had a look of disgust on her face at the sound of all the popping. Applejack on the other hand seemed pretty disinterested in them. She was more concerned with what I was about to do. I locked onto the tree and charged at it. I had never played football, but my brother had shown me proper technique. I hunkered down in the run and slammed my shoulder into the tree whilst lifting up slightly. In hind sight that is supposed to knock the other person off balance. That doesn't really work with a tree, but it did the ticket. There was a solid thud and all of the apples fell off. I fell back holding my shoulder. I did not expect it to hurt that much (I am such a moron in hindsight!). I managed to hold back a yelp I felt grow inside of me, but it was pretty clear I was uncomfortable.

"Now why in the hay did ya' go and hurt yerself like that Coal!?" Applejack was not happy with me (shit!). "That second kick of yers woulda' worked fine iff'n ya had done it twice. Ya don't need to impress us or nothin'!"

"Sorry AJ...I do have some pride. Even if it does make me do stupid things from time to time." Applejack softened up and put her hoof on my back.

"Now don't fret too much over it. What's done is done. Do ya think ya'll could still work?"

I was on my ass at the moment so that puts me almost right at a standing pony's eye level. I looked straight at her with probably the most excited expression I had ever had.

"Does that mean...I'm hired?" the hope was evident in my voice.

"It sure does sugarcube (she called me sugarcube! *fan boy squee*)! Ah can pay ya ten bits an hour. How does that sound?"

"I honestly don't know how currency works here, but I trust that is a more than fair offer. I accept! Thank you so much AJ!" Can you guess what I did next? I think you can. I've only done it to just about every single pony I've met! This time was different though. Twilight stepped in between us blocking my hug!

"Awwww" I whined.

"Careful there Applejack! Coal is a hugger whenever he gets emotional like that." Twilight gave me a coy look.

Applejack just laughed. "That is pretty funny, but Ah don't mind none." She walked around Twilight and gave me the biggest hug I've ever had. I'm not kidding when I say this pony is strong. If I wasn't in a state of euphoria I would of been in immense pain!

"Ponies are the best things ever!" I yell out giving Applejack just as big a hug in return. I could hear Twilight laughing at me, but I didn't care. I had two armfuls of pure southern awesomeness.

I think I'm even starting to get less perverted. Had this happened back on Earth the only thing I would be thinking about was how soft she was, or how good she smelt, or the way I could feel the heat coming off of her.....FUCK! I JUST FUCKED MYSELF!

Applejack broke the hug (glad it wasn't me this time) and helped me up (how? I don't know! but she did). "Iff'n you and Twi' don't have anymore plans fer today; would ya mind helping me out now Coal?"

"I don't think Twilight and I had anything else planned. Did we Twilight?"

"Nope. I'm gonna head back to the library. I think it is about time I get around to some business I need to take care of (why does that scare me).

"Alrighty Twilight! Thanks for bringing me here! I'll see you tonight!"

"So long Twi"! Thanks fer bringing me ah new worker!"

Twilight waved goodbye as Applejack and I waved her off. We then got back to work. We stopped for about twenty minutes when lunch came around. We didn't have anything fancy like apple pie, apple fritters, or what have you. We just sat under the trees enjoying the cool breeze having a couple of apples. I offered to have them taken out of my pay, but Applejack wouldn't have none of it. I'm a really lucky guy...at least I was until about two hours later...

"YEOUCH!" Applejack fell forward holding onto her back leg.

"Oh my god! AJ what happened!? Are you alright!?" I ran over to her in a panic. I think she noticed how worried I was and put on a tough facade.

"Ah'm alright Coal....Ah just kicked the tree wrong and messed up my leg ah bit. It rarely ever happens, but it does hurt."

"Let me try something to make you feel better AJ!" I kneel over her and took her back leg into my hands. She must not be used to being touched there, because she turned a bit red and looked away. I started massaging the muscles in her leg gently. I could feel where the muscles had contracted from the strain. I couldn't help but admire her form. She was petit, but at the same time had such beautiful muscles. "Is this helping any AJ?" I asked hoping she would say yes.

Applejack moaned a little. (Fuck! Now I'm excited and worried!) "Yeah it is Coal....please don't stop." (OH LORD HAVE MERCY!)

That was all I needed to hear. I kept up rubbing her for a couple more minutes before we both started hearing this really rapid stomping sound.

"Well what in tar nation is that!?" Applejack queried.

Neither of us saw it in time, but it was Big Macintosh charging me like a bull. We saw him just in time for him to ram into me at full gallop. I yelped falling back ass over tea kettle. I probably flew a good six feet before hitting the ground rolling a bit. Needless to say, I was knocked out cold.

* * * *

Authors note: Last update for the day! If I give you guys the next one...you'll hate me a lot more if I stop there!

Chapter 11: It Hurts to Laugh

"Macintosh! What the hay is wrong with ya!?"

"What do ya mean what's wrong with me? That thing was attackin' ya!"

"No he wasn't ya darn fool! Ah hurt mahself bucking ah tree and Coal was rubbin' mah leg to make me feel better!" Applejack was still in some pain and couldn't get up, but even on the ground her yelling was intimidating enough to make Big Mac back peddle a bit.

"Wha? Coal? It has ah name?" Big Mac was looking rather confused at the whole situation.

"Yer darn right he has a name! He is Twilight's new friend and she was introducen us today! He needed ah job and he does good work so ah hired him! Ah doubt he is gonna wanna stay after what ya did ta' him! Ya better pray to Celestia he isn't too hurt! Now get yer flank over there and help him!"

Big Mac hadn't seen Applejack this angry in a long time. The last time he could remember was when Applebloom got hurt trying to get her cutie mark. He walked over to Coal's almost lifeless body and poked at him a bit.

"What in sam hay are ya waiten fer!? Help him to!" Applejack was starting to turn red from all the yelling.

Big Mac rolled Coal onto his back and tried waking him up a bit. Nothing was working, so Big Mac put his hoof on Coal's chest and he screamed out in pain. Big Mac was startled by the outburst and fell back on his flank. Even though Applejack was still hurting she had put her own pain out of her mind and galloped over to Coal.

"Help me get this here shirt off of him!" Big Mac complied and got behind Coal. Applejack undid the buttons while Big Mac bit the collar and pulled it off. Applejack and Big Mac were horrified at

what they saw. Coal's whole upper body was bruised. It was a sickeningly dark purple. It was darkest at the upper left pectoral muscle and got lighter the further away it went. The skin was broken in several areas and he was bleeding profusely. Coal was sweating bullets and was having a hard time breathing. Applejack started to panic.

"Oh no Oh no Oh no! Ah can't believe this! Celestia damnit Big Mac! What iff'n he dies!? Ah didn't get to know him that well yet, but he was ah really nice guy! Twilight is going to kill us iff'n we don't help him somehow!"

Big Mac was taken back by Applejack's swearing, but quickly regained what composure he could.

"Ah'll go get Twilight AJ! You just keep an eye on that feller. Ah'll be back with her as soon as Ah can!" Big Mac raced off out of Sweet Apple Acres leaving Applejack alone with Coal.

"Auuugh....where am I?.....wh-what happened?" Coal awoke several minutes later with tears in his eyes.

"Don't move too much now sugarcube. Mah idiot brother thought ya were trying ta' hurt me and hit ya...hard."

"Hehe, ya got a good brother there AJ. Heheha AAUGH...it hurts to laugh..."

"Wha? What do ya mean Coal? He hurt ya bad!"

"Any brother who would protect his little sister from a creature he had never seen before like that obviously cares about her. Don't be too mad at him *cough* he was just trying to protect you." Coal was starting to look more and more pale.

"That's awful nice of ya to say Coal, but ya need ta' stop talken! Yer really badly hurt!"

"AJ...I think I have some internal damage...I-I'm not sure if I'm gonna live."

Applejack started to tear up. "Now don't ya'll start sayin' stuff like that! Yer gonna be fine! Big Mac left to go tell Twilight, she'll fix ya up nice and good!"

"You're a sweetheart AJ *cough* but I don't think it is going to do any good. I've never been very healthy for a human...my body can't handle this kind of strain."

"Don't say that Coal! You've been workin' out here all day! Yer tough, ya can get through this!"

Coal reached out and put his hand on Applejacks cheek. It was wet from the tears that were starting to flow out. "Thank you for crying for me AJ. I-I have to tell you something. If I pass

before I say it...even in death I wouldn't be able to forgive myself."

Applejack just sobbed. She didn't know Coal that well, but seeing any creature hurt like this made her break down.

"AJ...I want you...if you wouldn't mind...to tell Twilight, Fluttershy, Rarity, Dashie, and Spike that I love them very much. Also please tell Pinkie Pie that I'm sorry *cough* I didn't get to meet her."

"Ya can tell em yerself Coal! Please please please please don't talk like this!" Applejack got on the ground right next to Coal and kept on crying.

"Hey AJ...I...have one other very selfish favor to ask of you. Please believe me when I say I would never ask this if I wasn't dying."

Applejack looked Coal right in the eyes. Her bright beautiful green eyes looking deep into his dark emerald eyes. "*sniffle* Anything Coal....I'll do anything to make ya feel better."

"AJ...would you.....kiss me? I've never kissed a girl in all twenty years of my life. I don't want to die not knowing such a sweet thing."

Applejack's sobbing got all the more violent. She was starting to choke and hiccup on her own tears. She put on a forced smile and said: "It's going to be mighty salty Coal."

Coal just smiled. "If it's you AJ...I'll enjoy it." Coal closed his eyes and the tears that had pooled in them poured out all over his face.

Applejack leaned forward closing her eyes. She put her hoof on the side of Coal's face and leaned all the way in. It wasn't a deep kiss. It was very soft, but Coal loved every second of it. Ponies don't have lips like a human, they have muzzles that are firm and rough on Earth ponies. The muzzles on ponies in Equestria however; were firm but still a little soft and very smooth. An Earth pony wouldn't be able to pucker, but Equestria ponies could.

Applejack gently kissed Coal with tears falling from her eyes onto his face. She kissed him for several minutes until she could tell he had passed out. She leaned back to find Twilight and Big Mac staring at them. All Applejack could do was hang her head and sob.

* * * *

Author's notes: Short chapter I know, but it needed to be that way. I've got to ask the readers something though...do you think my character went too far in that? Like...asking Applejack to do that...I can't decide myself...

Bonus Chapter: Bitter Sweet

Author's note: When I was originally writing this part of the story (about 3 weeks ago); I actually almost ended it with the following. I'll explain more at the end.

* * * *

Coal was hurriedly rushed to Ponyville Emergency Care by Twilight and Applejack. They burst through the front doors with Coal being levitated in behind them. Nurse Redheart was behind the front counter when they arrived. She was used to wounded ponies from all of her years of medical experience, but the sight of Coal made her uneasy.

Applejack explained everything that happened while Twilight let the doctors take Coal into the emergency room. Nurse Redheart did her best to calm the distraught two, but was failing miserably.

Applejack couldn't stop blaming herself and Twilight couldn't stop feeling helpless. They held onto each other for as much morale support as they could get.

The doctors worked on Coal for hours, but to no avail. He was simply too different from what they had been trained for. The best they could do was make him comfortable.

The lead doctor came out of the emergency room to speak with Twilight and Applejack. "Ladies...I'm very sorry, but...we can't save him. He has internal bleeding and his lungs are filling up. We have a couple of unicorns sustaining him, but he won't last long..."

The girls had been slowly calming themselves while waiting, but this news brought back their pain in greater force. "I'm so sorry...if...if you girls want; you can say goodbye..."

Twilight looked at the doctor with confusion evident in her eyes. "How is that possible!? *sniffle* You said he won't last..."

"We can wake him, but it will result in him passing sooner. I suggest if you wish to do this, you decide quickly."

Twilight and Applejack looked at each other briefly. Applejack nodded and Twilight let out a pained sigh. "Please...let us say goodbye..."

The doctor lead them inside the room Coal was being kept. He was hooked up to a heart rate monitor that filled the room with slow beeping. His face was all that was visible. There were two unicorns that were constantly feeding a spell of some sort into Coal's body. The spell took the form of a constant beam of wavering light shooting forth from each unicorn's horn and then into Coal.

beep *beep* *beep* *beep* *beep*

Twilight and Applejack each went to one side of Coal. They looked to the doctor with pleading eyes as he nodded to the unicorns sustaining him.

"We'll cast a spell to wake up Coal, and then leave to give you your privacy. He'll only live for a minute or two at most. Please say your peace as quickly as possible."

Twilight and Applejack both nodded choking back fresh tears. The two unicorns shot forth a blinding flash of red and white that glowed inside of Coal for a few seconds. They took this time to leave with the doctor. As the light faded Coal slowly began to come to.

beep *beep* *beep* *beep* *beep*

"Wh-wha..." Coal's eyes were glazed over and foggy. There were large dark bags under his eyes that stood out against his incredibly pale skin.

"Coal...I'm so sorry..." Twilight couldn't think of what to say. Saying goodbye simply hurts too much.

"Twilight?...where...what..." Coal trailed off as he used what senses he had left to look around the room. "I see..."

Applejack nuzzled up to Coal's left and buried her face into his side. The bed slowly began to collect her tears as they streamed silently from her face. Applejack forced herself to look up. Coal with half opened eyes was staring at her. She forced a smile and said: "Coal...did...did ya enjoy it? Was it...sweet enough?"

Coal smiled back and tried reaching out to Applejack. His whole body nearly seized up as he moved. Applejack noticed this and quickly brought Coal's hand onto her face. They looked deeply into each other for a moment that seemed to last an eternity.

"It was everything I could of ever wanted AJ...thank you..."

beep *beep* *beep* *beep* *beep*

Coal then turned his attention to Twilight. "Twilight...I...I'm glad I get to say this in person. I...love you Twilight. You...were my best friend that I ever had..."

Twilight's face contorted as she desperately tried to hold back her emotions. She was only able to hold it back for so long. The floodgates opened and she let out a long and very pained cry. She reached forward and held onto Coal's arm as she sobbed loudly.

"Twilight...Applejack..." Coal began as he would look back and forth at the two. "...I'm not sad...please don't be sad for me. You've both made me so happy...if I knew this would happen and could choose it or choose to have never come here...I would choose this fate every time. I love you both so much...thank you..."

beep *beep* *beep* *beep* *beeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeee~*

* * * *

Author's notes: I tried my hand here at a slightly different writing style. I'm not sure how it holds up, but thankfully this is NOT the ending. The real ending is nowhere in sight. I had two reasons not to go this route. One: My original goal (that I'm still trying to follow) was to make a prolonged story; that could remain interesting and seem real. The second was that it was simply too sad, and way out of left field. The next update will be on a MUCH happier note.

Chapter 12: Hugs are awesome!

"Sh.....it" Was the first thing I said as I came back to consciousness. I was in a hospital bed that was barely big enough to hold me. The walls were a pristine white. There were beds to the left and right of me, but they were all empty. To my left was a single window and to my right was a door. As I lay there studying the room; the memories of what had transpired earlier came flooding back.

My confusion was replaced with self loathing as I remembered what I made Applejack do. I couldn't believe myself! I don't care if I was dying! She couldn't refuse in that situation, and now that I realize I'm not dying; she probably isn't going to want anything to do with me!

"Fuuuuuuuuuuuuuck!!! How did I live anyway?"

My thoughts were interrupted by the door opening and Twilight, Applejack, and Dash coming in behind a crimson red earth pony with a white mane. She had a white medical cross as her cutie mark. They were talking until they saw that I was awake. They immediately ran over to me.

"Oh thank Celestia you're awake!" Twilight yelled putting her hooves up onto my bed.

"I'm glad you're Ok Coal. You still owe me a day of hanging out you know!" Dash said trying to lighten the mood.

I smiled at them, but my attention was primarily on Applejack. I didn't want to say anything, I was so scared; but I'm a man damnit and I need to say something! "I'm sorry AJ.....I-I'm....so very very sorry I did that to you. I understand if you hate me. I just hope I can earn your forgiveness someday."

I looked away from the girls trying my best not to start crying again. I've been doing that too

much lately as it is.

Applejack walked around the bed and grabbed my face with her hooves. She made me look at her. "What in tar nation are ya apologizing fer Coal!? Ya didn't do anything wrong! What has gotten into ya?"

"AJ.....I'm apologizing for.....asking you to do....that." I tried to look away but she wouldn't let me. "Even if I thought I was dying....I shouldn't have put that upon you. I'm so sorry AJ. I'm a terrible friend..."

Applejack then did something I never would of expected. No she didn't kiss me (although I wish she did). She gave me a good punch in the jaw (OWW!).

"Applejack!" both Twilight and Dash yelled.

Applejack raised her hoof to silence them, and then turned her attention back to me. I was wide eyed and was rubbing the spot where she hit me. It didn't hurt too bad, but emotionally that was a blow that could destroy cities (yeah I'm a pretty big wuss; deal with it).

"I-I deserved that."

"No ya don't Coal!" I looked back at her confused. "Don't be sorry fer what ya did! Ya thought ya were dying and ya were! If Twilight hadn't levitated ya back here then Ah doubt we'd be talking right now! Ah ain't mad at ya fer that! Ah'm mad that ya would possibly think Ah'd be mad!" Applejack turned her head looking away from me. "Ah was mighty flattered Coal. It weren't my first time, so it didn't bug me."

I stared at her dumbfounded. I probably stared far longer than I should have, but when she turned around and I saw the look of hurt on her face; I just broke. Right then and there I broke. I leaned back into my bed and hung my head low and just let the tears flow. I didn't sob, I didn't whine. I just looked like I was deep in thought with my eyes open and crying. I've mentioned that I have been doing too much of that right? Cause I have. I broke the silence with "I don't understand you girls."

I was still looking down, but I could tell they were all looking at me. "I make Dashie, the first friend I made here cry from my stupid story. I wreck Twilight's house because of my stupid nightmare, and I ask AJ to kiss me because I thought I was dying and didn't want to die having never been kissed. I have been the most awful friend anyone could ever have, and you girls have forgiven me time and time again. What have I done to deserve this? I...I just don't understand." The tears had finally stopped, but I didn't look up.

The girls looked at each other a bit before sighing. Dash flew onto my bed and was staring me down. Applejack came up to my left and put her hooves on the bed pulling herself close to me;

like how Twilight had done. They were all staring at me intently.

"Coal..." Twilight was the first one to start.

"Y-yeah?"

"Shut up..."

I looked at her completely shocked. I did not expect that. It was so unexpected I laughed a little.

"Now don't ya'll start laughin yet Coal! We still got a bone to pick with ya!" Applejack stated almost growling.

I quickly shut up and started to sweat a bit. I had no idea what was about to happen.

"Yeah Coal, you have to stop being so hard on yourself!" Dash stated. "All those things you said aren't even your fault! I wanted to hear your story. It was just really sad and made me cry a little....just a little!"

"And you had a nightmare Coal. That isn't your fault. I already told you that it wasn't a big deal and forgave you for it, but you obviously haven't forgiven yourself."

"And ya didn't make me kiss ya! Ah didn't have ta'! Ah did it ta' not only make ya feel better, but ta' make me feel better!" Applejack blushed a bit. "It was awful sweet of ya to say what ya said. That if it was me it didn't matter if it was salty. Ya didn't want just any pony....ya wanted me. Ah....Ah'm just flattered is all..."

Twilight and Dash looked at Applejack for a moment and then they both leapt away from my bed laughing!

"Now what the hay has gotten into ya'll!?"

"Oh Applejack, I've never seen you so embarrassed! It is really funny!"

"Yeah! What Twilight said! You're always so tough and proud, and here comes Coal making you go all soft on us!"

"Now that taint fair! He was hurt and Ah was really emotional!"

"Girls..." I finally spoke up.

They all silenced themselves quickly and looked up at me. "I love you girls so much." I don't think they were expecting that. They all nearly turned purple (well Twilight is always purple). "I

mean it too. I have met thousands of people in my life, and only a handful of ponies. I have never in all of my time on Earth met people half as nice as any of you girls. I...I love you girls more than I'll ever be able to say. I honestly don't know how I managed to live without you now. If..if you girls don't mind...I want to be more than just your friend. I want to be your best friend! I want to be someone that you can rely on, and not have to take care of all the time. I'm pretty pathetic right now, but if it is you three...I'll make myself super human if I have to."

Yeah that was pretty cheesy, but I think it made the girls feel better...actually I know it did. All three of them hug tackled me. That's right! I was in a four-way hug between three of the most awesome ponies ever! I was so damn happy that I completely ignored the searing pain my chest.

"Ahem" The crimson pony finally spoke up. "I don't mean to break up this tender moment, but I think you girls are putting your friend there in a lot of pain. He hasn't healed yet you know."

They all immediately jumped back and each gave me a sheepish apologetic grin.

"It was soooo worth it nurse!" I was smiling ear to ear.

She just chuckled and said: "Yes I bet. You're a lucky man to have not one, but three mare friends." She looked at them and gives them a coy wink.

They all immediately went flushed and started denying it and correcting her with fervor. She just laughed during all of it. If it weren't for the fact that they denied it so adamantly I probably would of laughed too, but I was kinda disappointed. What? I love those girls! If they are OK with it then so am I!.....yeah that is more than wishful thinking.

"Now, my name is Nurse Redheart. Your friends tell me that your name is Coal. Let me tell you Coal you're a very lucky....whatever you are."

"He's human" Twilight interjected.

"Yes thank you. You are a very lucky human. That blow you received did a huge number on your respiratory system. If it weren't for the fact that Twilight brought you here, and then went to a zebra named Zecora to get a restoring brew; well...you wouldn't have made it. You're still not 100% mind you. I don't know how long it takes humans to heal, but you need to take it easy for at least two weeks."

"Two weeks!? Are you serious!? Aww man...and I just got a job too."

"Don't worry about it sugarcube. No pony is going to take your spot. You're more than welcome back iff'n ya can forgive Big Macintosh."

"I already forgive him AJ. I better tell him though, if he is as kind as the rest of you I'm sure he is feeling pretty bad about it."

"Wow Coal! How can you forgive him that easily? He almost killed you!" Dash exclaimed. Applejack shot her a dirty look. "What? It's true..."

I chuckled a little. "I can forgive him the same way you girls forgive me. I know the situations are entirely different, and the degree of what happened was much more severe; but Big Mac only did what he thought he had to do to protect his sister. I could never stay mad at some pony as brave as that."

We spent the next few minutes talking and actually worked up a very pleasing deal. I would spend the next couple of weeks going to Sweet Apple Acres and learning about everything it takes to run a farm. When I mentioned to Applejack that I was pretty good with numbers; she asked if I wouldn't mind taking a look at some of the paperwork. Apparently running a farm is very difficult, and apparently again; she and Big Mac aren't great with numbers. Granny Smith still takes care of most of it, but she is getting on in years. Twilight got me signed out of the hospital and even got me a walking cane from the local wood smith.

The three of us chit chatted on our way back to the library. Once we arrived Applejack and Dash went their separate ways.

"Oh man it is good to be back! Oh hey Twilight?"

"Yes Coal?"

"How long was I out anyway? I had been meaning to ask, but it just slipped my mind."

"You were out for three days, which reminds me. Rarity got you some clothes made while you were out. She thought it would a fabulous way to welcome you back to the waking world." Twilight and I chuckled at her antics and word play.

"I'll have to thank her the next chance I get, but that needs to wait. I AM STARVING!"

"Hehe I bet! Spike had to go to Canterlot to talk to the princess for me since I didn't want to leave you. So it's just us for now (my heart skipped a beat...I was alone with Twilight Sparkle...one of the smartest most gorgeous ponies ever....and she said she didn't want to leave me....WOOOOOOOT!)."

"Thanks Twilight, I'm glad you stayed. I would of missed seeing you." She blushed a bit but didn't look away this time. "You said princess? I think you mentioned her...or was it them...before."

"Oh my goodness! We haven't told you about the princesses?"

"Not in detail anyway..."

"I can't believe I forgot about that!"

"It isn't that big of a deal Twilight. It isn't like I have to meet them or anything." Twilight laughed nervously. "Twilight....why are you in a position to just send messages to the princess like it was no big deal? Are you royalty or something? Have I been giving royalty a difficult time ever since I got here!?" (I must love giving these poor girls grief. I am such an ass!)

"No no Coal, I'm not royalty. I'm princess Celestia's personal student. She has taught me so much, and I like to think of her as some pony very special in my life. As for your earlier comment...well...I sent the princess a letter about you after I got back home from Sweet Apple Acres the other day."

"Should I be worried?"

"Oh no not at all Coal. She is the most wonderful pony you will ever meet. She just really wanted some detailed information about you. You are the first human Equestria has ever had after all. She wanted me to come down and inform her of all you've done since you arrived personally, but with you being hurt I couldn't bring myself to leave. I asked and she gave me permission to send Spike instead. She is probably going to want to meet you soon."

"Wow...a princess is going to want to meet me. That is really heavy..."

"Heavy? What does that mean?"

"Oh hahahah, it's a very dated expression from my world. You know when you get nervous you feel that weight in your chest? Well anything that makes you feel that way, humans used to call heavy."

"Ohh....that makes sense I guess, but anyway you said you were hungry. I can't cook as well as Spike, but there is plenty of fruit for you if you'd like."

"Hmmm....do you have any oranges?"

"I sure do! Let me grab you a couple."

"Thanks Twilight, you're awesome!"

* * * *

Upon saying goodbye to Coal and Twilight, Applejack made her way back to Sweet Apple Acres. The trip was short thanks to no interruptions, but Applejack wasn't too thrilled to be making such good time. She was going to have to talk to Big Mac about Coal again; now that he had woken up. Big Mac was very defensive when they found out that Coal wasn't going to die. He also didn't trust him because of the kiss he saw. Applejack just couldn't seem to make Big Mac understand it wasn't anything sexual. It was more like a goodbye kiss than anything. He just wouldn't have any of it.

As Applejack arrived home, and she was greeted by Applebloom. "Howdy Applejack! Did ya check on Coal again?" Applebloom was distraught at hearing that her new friend had been hurt, and was even more so when she learned it was due to Big Mac.

"Heya sugarcube! Ah sure did, and ya'll be happy ta' know that he has woken up and been sent home with Twilight!"

"Yay!" Applebloom exclaimed jumping about a bit. "Ah'm sure glad he is better! How is he doin'?"

"He is ah little banged up still, but he should be fine and dandy in ah couple ah weeks."

"Two weeks!? Does that mean he ain't coming round here till then? He was awful nice, and ah was kinda looken forward ta' seein him again.." Applebloom kicked at the ground a bit in disappointment.

"Now don't ya fret none! Coal will be stopping by tomorrow ta' start learning the way our farm works. He won't be able ta' do a lot of physical labor, but he'll learn everything he needs ta' know. So ya'll will be able to see him some. Ah suppose ya could teach him some stuff iff'n ya would like."

Applebloom nodded her head with a big smile on her face. "Ah'd like that sis! Ah'll be sure to teach him proper!"

Applejack laughed a little, but quickly lost her good mood when she saw Big Mac duck back into the house. He had apparently been eaves dropping on their conversation.

"Applebloom, Ah need ya ta' stay outta the house for ah little bit. Ah need to talk ta' Big Macintosh in private."

"Ya'll aren't gonna fight some more, are ya?"

"Ah don't know sugarcube. Ah just know that Big Mac don't take too kindly ta' Coal right now. Ah need to make sure he won't do nothin when Coal gets here tomorrow."

"Ok sis.....Ah understand. Ah'll be back in about an hour. Iff'n ya need me before then; Ah'll be at

the clubhouse."

Applejack kissed her sisters forehead and waved her off. She now had to face a much bigger problem. Big Macintosh...

Applejack stepped inside to find Big Mac working on dinner. He heard her come in, but didn't acknowledge her. Applejack took a seat at the dinner table and sat there for a couple of minutes before speaking up.

"Coal woke up today..." Applejack looked to Big Mac, he had stopped working and had turned to face her. He let out a grunt in acknowledgement and quickly got back to work.

"Now come on Big Macintosh! We are gonna havta' talk about this! Coal can't do any hard labor for ah couple of weeks, but he'll be here tomorrow ta' start learnen bout the farm. Ya need ta' be able to get a long."

"Ah don't understand why ya hired him AJ. Ah hit him pretty hard sure, but to be brought so close to death by that....Ah don't think he'll be able to do good enough work ta' afford keepen him on."

"BIG MACINTOSH! Ah'm surprised at you! Ah worked with Coal for hours before ya showed up and hurt em. He was doin mighty fine work! It took him ah couple ah kicks ta' knock all the apples down yes, but he was worken almost as fast as Ah was! And Ah've been doin this all mah life!"

Big Mac just grunted and went back to work.

"What is botheren you so much Mac? Ah just don't understand....."

Applejack was cut off by Big Mac stomping his hooves on the floor. "Ya know darn well what's bother me so much AJ!"

"The kiss!? Really!? It was his dying wish! He hadn't ever known that feeling before in his life! He just didn't want ta' die missing out on something like that! Ah know full well you've dated things other than ponies! And have done less than should we say noble things with them!"

"It was one griffon AJ! One bloody griffon! And at least griffons are from this world! We hardly know anything about him AJ! He could be ah filly-fooler or a colt-cuddler for all we know!"

"Now don't ya start bad mouthen him like that Big Mac! Applebloom really likes him and Ah don't want ya saying filth like that around her!" Applejack was trying to stay level headed, but a short fuse is very common amongst the Apple family.

"All the more reason we should be worried about it AJ! He had been here what?...two maybe

three days when ya met him? How many mares has he got wrapped around his fingers in that time? Ah was at the hospital AJ! Ah saw ya'll huggen on him! Ya'll can't convince me that there ain't any feelings there!"

Applejack was taken back. She liked Coal well enough sure, but she hadn't thought of him in that way. She was just doing what felt right at the time. Coal was upset and hugs always made him feel better. That is what Twilight and Dash had told her. It wasn't like Coal had made any advances on any of them. All he wanted was to be their friend. Thinking about all of this, she found renewed vigor in fighting with Big Macintosh.

"Ah never knew ya could be this racist Mac. Ah'll tell ya right now that Ah don't have those kinds of feelings for him, but Ah also won't deny that it could happen!" Big Mac stopped moving altogether. If Applejack couldn't hear his exaggerated breathing he could of passed for a life like statue. "Coal is ah very friendly and hard worken guy! Did ya know that he hurt himself when we first met trying to knock all the apples outta the tree in one hit? He charged the tree much like how ya charged him. He hit the tree so hard it ended up brusien him up a bit. He did it cause he really wanted ta' work here and was worried that iff'n he couldn't do it in one hit; Ah wouldn't hire him."

Big Mac continued to stay silent, but he slowly turned to face his sister.

"He shook it off and worked hard for a few hours before lunch. He tried ta' get me ta' take the apples we ate outta his pay. He didn't want ta' be ah burden on any pony. We got back to work and he kept at it even though Ah could tell he was hot, sweaty, and tired. He never once complained. And when Ah hurt mahself he came runnen over ta' make sure Ah was Ok almost instantly. He calmed me down and tried very hard to let me keep mah pride. Ah wish ya coulda seen the look on his face when he was rubbing mah leg. He looked like he was concentrating so hard it would make Twi' envious. Did you know he has already forgiven you for nearly killing him? He said so in the hospital. He went so far as ta' say that he was worried ya might be feelin bad after what happened. He wanted ta' let you know that he was OK, and wasn't mad at ya for what happened...he stood up for ya Big Mac. He said he couldn't blame ya for doin what ya did. That ya thought you were just protectin yer sister..." Applejack trailed off looking away from Big Mac. "...He doesn't deserver ta' be treated like this Big Mac. And iff'n he keeps acting the way he does, and Ah get ta' know him better; why...Ah just may ask him out fer a drink!"

Big Mac stared at Applejack with a look of pain, regret, and anger. He closed his eyes and let out a big sigh. When he looked back at Applejack his eyes had softened up a bit. "AJ Ah...Ah'm sorry." Big Mac stopped working and walked over to Applejack. He stopped when he was right next to her. "Ah didn't know most ah that. Yer right AJ...he really doesn't deserve ta' be treated like this. Ah can't say Ah trust him completely yet, but...he at least deserves a chance. Ah'll apologize when Ah see him next."

Applejack reached out and embraced her big brother. "Ah'm so happy ta' hear ya say that Big

Mac. Iff'n it makes ya feel better Ah don't mind being there when ya do."

"It's something Ah should probably do mahself AJ, but thank ya kindly fer the offer." Big Mac broke the hug and stepped back with a pondering look on his face. "But Ah would have ta' approve of him before Ah'd be ok with ya hooken up with him."

Applejack just laughed. "Don't worry bout it too much Big Mac. Ah doubt Coal would feel the same way. Ah was just trying ta' prove a point."

At this there came a knock at the door and Applebloom walked in. "Are ya'll done talken now? It is mighty cold out here."

Big Mac and Applejack shared a good laugh at that adorable little sister of theirs.

"Come on in sugarcube. We've had our talk and ya will be happy ta' know that Big Mac is going ta' give Coal a fair shot!"

"Yaaay!" Applebloom squealed in delight.

Big Mac and Applejack finished setting up dinner and Applebloom went to go wake Granny Smith up. There would be a lot to talk about over dinner that night with her.

* * * *

Author's notes: I had a very hard time convincing myself to write Big Mac like that at first. I managed to justify it to myself by considering how important family is to the Apples. Big Mac may be quiet and calm when nothing serious is happening, but I always figured he would stand up and take charge in anything he felt strongly about. That includes protecting his sisters from...well...me.

Chapter 13: Time alone with Twilight (more awkwardness ensues)

Author's notes: Forget that my character is a perv? Here is a reminder in the first minute!

Coal and Twilight enjoyed their simple meal in relative silence. Things were a little awkward at the moment. Both Coal and Twilight weren't really sure how they should behave in this situation. Neither of them had any experience with the opposite genders in a romantic sense, so being alone together was more than a little uncomfortable.

"Calm down Coal! You have seen rule 34 of this pony....god that's fucked up....but you shouldn't be this intimidated to be alone with her! She isn't a child here. She is a young adult! You're an adult! Besides, after that kiss with Applejack...even if it wasn't anything sexual... it would be

more than enough to turn off Twilight to thoughts of romance about me. So just calm down and talk. HmMMMM...maybe I can pick up where I left off at Rarity's the other day..."

Coal's thoughts were interrupted by Twilight. "So um Coal....Applejack told me a bit about what had happened at the farm, but I want to hear it from you. If you don't mind that is..."

"Not at all Twilight. There really isn't all that much to tell." Coal then told Twilight everything that happened after she left. Work, lunch, more work, Applejack gets hurt, he gives her one of his infamous rubs, Big Mac thinks he is hurting her and knocks him out. He wakes up feeling like he is dying, and convinces Applejack to give him a kiss before he dies.

Twilight looked like she wanted to ask Coal a question, but just didn't know how to go about it. Coal picked up on this and said: "I can tell you want to say something Twilight. I don't mind, I'll listen to whatever it is."

Twilight looked up at him and let out a little sigh. "I don't really understand the whole...kiss thing. Do you...like Applejack in that way?"

"I'm not sure Twilight (yes I am and yes I do....I'm such an ASS!). It's just that my fondest wish is to have a big family. In order to have a big family I need to find a woman to love. A part of loving a woman is being...intimate. I have never had a girlfriend Twilight, and as I was dying; I couldn't help but think upon my life. I couldn't come up with a thought happy enough to ease the pain. So I did the only logical thing I could in that situation, I made one. I think Applejack knows that it wasn't a...sexual thing. It was more like I wanted to feel cared for in that way. To know that there was someone...some pony that cares enough about me to do that. That was all I really wanted..." Coal looks down with a look of pain spread across his face.

"Coal?...something is still bothering you, do you want to tell me?" Twilight had gotten a little closer to Coal and put her hoof on his arm reassuringly.

Coal looked up at her. He looked deeply into Twilight's eyes. He admired their beauty and the life he could see in them. They were so innocent and pure. He felt he could stare into them forever and never truly understand their full luster. He forcefully turned away from Twilight and stared off into space. He was thinking about an appropriate answer to give her.

"Well Twilight...the truth is...I'm still a little lonely."

It was Twilight's turn to have a pained expression. "Why? I'm here, and you have Spike and Dash, Rarity, Fluttershy and Applejack. You'll get to meet Pinkie Pie soon...why are you lonely Coal?"

Coal let out a long hard sigh. He popped his joints again and just groaned. "It is hard to explain Twilight. I'm not lonely for friends anymore. I couldn't be even if I wanted to. You've all been

amazing. What I'm lonely for is someone...some pony...any pony I can confide in. Believe it or not Twilight, but I haven't been...as open with you as you may think. There are...a lot of things bothering me; things I could never tell you or any of the others I've met. That isn't all though. Kissing Applejack made me realize just how lonely I am for...closer companionship. I don't honestly care too much about the physical part of a relationship like a lot of human guys are. All I want is some pony to hold and to hold me back. One I can care for and protect. I don't want to be this angsty kind of guy anymore. I want to have a reason to be stronger. I want to have a reason to make myself better than I am. A lover is a great way to do that. I just don't know where to start. I also worry that I won't find any pony who can love me back...in that way. Maybe I'm thinking about it too much, or maybe I'm still on some pain meds or something and they are messing with my head." Coal forced out a chuckle.

Twilight on the other hoof; didn't find any of it to be funny. "Coal...I had no idea you felt that way. If you can't tell me anything specific, do you want to give me a gist of things? That may help you. As for the um, other kind of loneliness...I can tell you that you don't need to worry about it."

Coal looked up at Twilight with a curious look.

"It's true that you look...different; that goes without saying. However, if you're as nice to some pony as nice as you've been to me and...well every pony else; then you shouldn't have any trouble finding some pony special. If they can't get over your appearance...then they probably aren't meant for you anyway." Twilight reached out and gave Coal a small hug. She rested her head on his shoulder and nuzzled him a little. Coal turned his body and returned the gesture. He rested his head upon hers (avoiding the horn of course). They stayed that way for a few minutes before Coal started talking.

"I'm afraid I can't really talk about the darker things in my life Twilight. I trust you with my life, but I don't want to ruin yours. Hopefully once I start working, and all this stress of how different I am here passes...I won't be bothered by the past and all my mistakes. I'll be able to live for the future. Also, thanks Twilight. You're just...perfect...yeah, just perfect."

Coal and Twilight stayed in each others embrace for a few more minutes. Twilight then convinced Coal it was time for bed. They said their good-nights and Coal got comfortable in his usual spot. He hoped that this night would be better. It wasn't....

* * * *

"Urrgh!" I awoke in a panic. I had the same dream again; it was taunting me. Thankfully after looking around I could see that I hadn't woken Twilight up or knocked anything down this time, but I was covered in sweat and tears. I couldn't remember having this dream whilst in the hospital. I figured it was because I was probably on some kind of medication. "Why do I keep having this dream?" I questioned to nothing.

It was at this time that I could hear Twilight walking down the stairs. "Coal? You had that nightmare again? We never did end up talking about it...do you want to?" I looked over to Twilight and...you know what? I have to say this. It is going to keep bugging me if I don't say it. Twilight is FUCKING GORGEOUS! I don't care if that is obscene or not. She walks down with a little bed mane and gently rubbing sleep from her eyes, and all I want to do is scoop her up and kiss and love her until the end of time. I wouldn't hate myself about it so much if I didn't feel that way about any of the others, but I do. Like a complete douche I can't decide who to spend my affections on. Hopefully some more time will make that decision easier. Not that I feel like I stand a chance, but still.

"It's best I don't Twilight. I trust you though, so I can tell you this: I think the dream is symbolizing my uncertainty with you and your friends. You know I have a hard time trusting...well anything, but I've been more open to you, Dashie, and Applejack than I have been with my own parents. I think a part of me is still not sure if that is a good idea or not, and it keeps showing me things in an attempt to keep me from trusting you girls. Don't worry though; whatever it is, it isn't going to succeed." I give Twilight as gentle a smile as I could find.

"I see...I don't know what you've been seeing, but I can assume that I'm in it. Hmm.." Twilight trailed off as she appeared to be deep in thought. After a couple of minutes she smiled and shook herself out of it (literally). "I'm glad you're not worrying about it Coal. I found it so weird for a human to be here, but I didn't think about how much worse it was for you. Hopefully these dreams will pass, but if they don't; I'll always be here to talk about it."

Twilight gave me the most comforting smile I have ever seen. It made me go HNNNGGRRRRRGGGHHHHGHGHGHGH on the inside. "Does any pony have a defib unit? I think I'm having a heart attack!" I chuckled a little at my own silliness before getting up and dusting myself off. "I think I better take another shower. You did say Rarity made me some clothes yesterday right?" Twilight nodded. "Awesome, how did she end up getting the measurements; if you don't mind my asking. I was still in my normal clothes when I woke up..."

"Oh that was easy. I used a full body scan spell on you. It gives a vague amount of information, but all I really needed were your proportions." Twilight gave me an innocent smile clearly not aware of how violated I felt.

"Huh...that's pretty handy. Are they here somewhere? I don't want to have to get back into these things after a shower, again."

"Rarity still has them. She wanted to be here when you got them. Why don't you take a LONGER shower this time, and I'll be back with her soon. I can't believe how quickly you go about your showers Coal. Take some time to yourself and enjoy them a bit." Twilight laughed and went back upstairs to clean up.

I stood there a little dumbfounded. "Twilight is getting really comfortable around me...awesome!"

I head to the restroom and prep for the shower. Before I get in I hear Twilight yell to me: "I'm going to Rarity's now Coal! I'll be back in a little bit!"

"Ok Twilight! I'll see you soon!" It felt so good to be able to talk like that with someone. I had moments like that with my folks back home, but when it's a girl it definitely feels different. Not bad at all, but different.

* * * *

Author's notes: Have I mentioned lately how awesome my readers are? No? I love you guys!
bro-hooves

Chapter 14: Don't leave Coal alone...seriously!

Author's notes: I am so dang weird sometimes! It just makes me laugh though!

Twilight was in a cheery mood. Sure there was more drama with Coal, but she always did enjoy his compliments. They felt sincere each and every time.

It was still fairly early when she arrived at the Boutique. Twilight wondered if she should be here so early. Before she could make up her mind to wait or knock; the door swung open and Twilight was tackled to the ground by Rarity.

"Augh! Rarity? What is going on?" Twilight asked picking herself up.

"Oh my goodness! I'm so sorry Twilight. I heard that Coal had woken up and I just couldn't wait to bring him his new clothes!" Rarity had been levitating several bags overhead before the accident. She quickly lifted them all back up and gave Twilight a shy grin.

"Heheh. I was actually on my way here to see if you could bring them over. Coal just jumped in the shower and is going to be needing some fresh clothes. He was really looking forward to them!"

"Oh fabulous darling!" Rarity's mood quickly soured. "I hope Coal isn't mad about what happened a few days ago. Did you ever get to talk with him about it?"

Twilight suddenly remembered the incident with the massage. She face hooped and gave Rarity an apologetic look. "No Rarity I'm afraid I didn't. There was a bit of an incident that morning and neither Coal or myself were thinking about anything else. Then Coal got the job at Sweet Apple Acres and the misunderstanding with Big Mac followed. It just didn't come up. Sorry about that Rarity..."

"No need to fret darling. I've had plenty of time to cool down and if it comes up I'll talk to Coal

about it myself. I hope he doesn't pry too much though. It would be dreadfully shameful to admit that he got me...excited."

Twilight tried to stifle a laugh, but ended up failing. "Trust me Rarity, he wouldn't mind one bit. I'm sure he would be a bit embarrassed, but not offended or turned off about your friendship."

Rarity gave Twilight a look that just screamed: How do you know this?

Twilight just laughed some more. "Don't worry about it Rarity. Just trust me when I say that I doubt Coal could ever be mad at any of us. He isn't even mad at Big Mac for what happened."

Rarity lightened up and let out a small gasp. "That is wonderful! Big Mac is such a dear; I would hate for them to not get along."

Twilight grew a mischievous smile. "Has our dear Rarity already found a new stallion to swoon after?" Twilight gave Rarity a playful shove.

Rarity went red and gave a small huff. "Now don't get me wrong Twilight. Big Mac is a very fine stallion, but he just isn't my type. He is just far too quiet most of the time. I would never know what he is thinking!"

"Well you probably wouldn't like Coal that much then. I thought he was telling me pretty much everything, but last night he admitted that he has kept the worst of what's bothering him from me. I think he was worried it would traumatize me or something...and it probably could."

"Oh the poor dear. I hope whatever it is isn't too serious."

"You and me both Rarity. Come on; I'm sure Coal is probably done with the shower by now."

* * * *

"I wonder what kind of clothes Rarity made for me... I hope they aren't too frou-frou as Applejack would put it. I probably should of told her that I need some work clothes, but I didn't know I would get the job at Sweet Apple Acres at the time...man that is a mindful (heh)! I'll just call it S.A.A. for short. Anyway, I'm sure I'll really like them regardless."

I then finished up my shower and dried off. I didn't want to put back on my clothes because well...I've been having to wear the same underwear for five or so days now! That is really not cool. I should of asked for some, but....how can I ask that without it becoming weird!?

I stuck my head out of the bathroom and called out to see if Twilight was home. I didn't get an answer so I guess I got done too early again. I'm not proud of how I decided to spend my time alone, but it had been five days and my....'you know what' was really starting to hurt! It used to

be an every other day thing, and sometimes several times a day. I'm not proud of it, but you do what you have to do. I'll be honest though...thinking back to seeing Fluttershy's...*whimper* made it pretty easy. Hers was the only that I have seen since I arrived. I don't know if I was at just the right angle or what, but they are much better hidden than one would think. Both to my personal relief and disappointment. What? Are you saying that you wouldn't take a look if given the chance? I love these ponies mind, body, and soul! Plus...I'm pretty weak to temptation. The internet has spoiled me rotten. Shortly after finishing that unpleasantness I heard the library door shut followed by voices.

"Coal? I'm back with Rarity! She has your new clothes with her!"

"Awesome!" I called out from behind the bathroom door. "Hey Rarity! Good to see you again!" I opened the door slightly and poked my head out.

Rarity levitated the bags down and started searching through them. "It is good to see you too Coal. Now I've made a few sets of clothes based off of what you've been wearing. I added my own little touch of style to them. I hope you like them."

"That sounds wonderful Rarity, but I'm curious; did you happen to make any clothes that I could work in? I got a job at Sweet Apple Acres and I would hate to ruin the clothes you made for me."

Rarity just beamed at me. "I certainly did Coal. While you were in the hospital Twilight informed me of your new job, and with that information I made you some clothes with functionality in mind!" Rarity then levitated a brown and green bag over to the bathroom door.

"Thanks Rarity! I'll be out in just a minute!" I grabbed the bag and pulled it into the bathroom closing the door behind me. I pulled out the contents and my heart skipped a beat. They were amazing! I couldn't tell you what they were made from, but they felt very strong.

There was a short sleeved green polo shirt that was stitched to look like a tree with leaves. There were red apples stitched throughout the shirt too. There were some light brown pants stitched to look like a tree trunk, with matching brown shoes stitched to look like roots. The shoes felt as firm and durable as leather, but were much more flexible. There was a cowboy hat inside that was the same light brown as the pants, and it had green trim the same color as the shirt. There were also some gloves made of the same material as the shoes. They were a matching light brown. And much to my delight, there were some cotton under shorts and socks at the bottom of the bag. I was so happy I couldn't even wait to get dressed to start thanking Rarity from behind the bathroom door.

"Oh my god Rarity! These are the most amazing clothes I have ever seen! You are an absolute genius and delight Rarity! I'm sorry, but you best prepare for a hug when I get out of here! I can hardly contain myself!"

I could hear Twilight and Rarity laughing at my reaction. After they calmed down I heard Rarity pipe up and say: "I'm so glad you like them darling. Those were so much fun to make!"

Twilight chimed in "I'm going to put your other clothes upstairs Coal."

"Thanks Twilight, but wait just a moment, I'm finished getting dressed. I want you to see how awesome these look!"

I stepped out of the bathroom with my head held high. "I have never felt so good looking in all my life! Rarity, you are.....the best designer I have ever met! Your work would turn every head in my world. I doubt I could walk ten feet without people stopping me asking where I got such gorgeous clothes!"

Rarity was beaming and soaking in every word. I walked over to her and kneeled down ready to take my hug, but it was given to me. She literally jumped into my arms and held me tight.

"I'm so glad they are to your taste darling!" She pulled her head back a bit so that she could look me in the eye. "And I want to apologize for what happened the last time we saw each other. I'm not really comfortable telling you what happened, but I want you to know you didn't do anything wrong. I absolutely loved that massage of yours! Those hands of yours are magical in their own right! And if you wouldn't mind sometime, I would just die for another."

I couldn't contain myself. I managed to keep myself from kissing her, but I took off my hat (so that it wouldn't get in the way) and I rubbed my nose against hers. She turned red, but didn't resist. She closed her eyes and hummed a little.

"I would be honored to give you another Rarity. Just say the word and I'm yours for as long as you want me." I set Rarity down and it may just be wishful thinking, but she looked a little disappointed at the lose of contact.

"Do I need to leave, so you two can have your privacy?" Twilight said reminding us she was here.

We both turned red and looked away.

"Sorry about that Twilight. You know how I get when I'm really really happy." I was scratching my head looking a little ashamed.

Twilight giggled. "I know Coal. I'm just teasing you."

Rarity cleared her throat. "Yes well...I should probably get going. I know you're going back to Sweet Apple Acres for work Coal. I have some orders that need filling myself." Right before Rarity left she looked back and in almost a whisper said: "I think I could use one of your

massages later; if you're not too busy that is."

"I seriously doubt it Rarity. I'll see you soon." I gave her a big smile.

She smiled back and then went along her way.

Twilight just sighed and shook her head. "I wonder if I should tell Pinkie Pie to make your welcome to Ponyville party a congratulations on the new couple party as well..."

I laughed nervously. "I wouldn't recommend it. Rarity just likes me as a friend. And I get a welcoming party?" (FUCK YEAH!)

Twilight gave me a raised eyebrow look and then nodded her head. "I'm sure you will. Pinkie Pie just loves to throw parties. She stopped by the hospital when she found out what had happened. She was really disappointed she hadn't gotten to meet you yet. I imagine she may stop by the farm today if she finds out you're awake."

"I would love that. Speaking of which I better get down there! Don't want to be too late for my first real day of work!"

* * * *

Author's notes: While writing a certain part in this story (I'm not saying which, but I think ya'll know), I had to stop and walk outside. I stared at the sky and thought about my life for a few minutes, before finally coming to a decision. "Fuck it..."

Chapter 15: Party Time

Twilight and I said our goodbyes and I made my way down to Sweet Apple Acres. Twilight offered to come with me, but I remembered the way. Plus I didn't want to make her go so far out of her own way each and every time I do something. I was by myself, and was feeling mighty snazzy in my duds by the way.

As I made the trip down to the farm I was getting the same curious stares, but this time they were more admiring my clothes than anything. I laughed a little inside and thought about how I couldn't blame them. These were some pretty darn impressive clothes. If I had stuff like this back home I would of been insanely popular.

I bragged about Rarity in my head the whole trip.

When I finally arrived I was greeted by Applebloom at the gate. "Howdy Coal! Wow~! ya look really fancy! Ah bet Rarity made ya those!"

"Haha thanks Applebloom! And you're right. Don't worry though; believe it or not these are work clothes. Rarity made them with my work on the farm in mind, so I'm sure this is strong material."

Applebloom and I walked to the barn to meet with Applejack. She was telling me about her latest attempt at a cutie mark. They ended up wrecking Roseluck's garden trying to get their cutie mark in gardening. Rose was nice about the whole thing, but still pretty upset. Applejack made Applebloom go back and loosen up all the soil so her next batch of flowers could grow more easily.

We got to the barn and Applebloom said goodbye having to get back to her chores. She apparently had more plans for today with Sweetie Belle and Scootaloo. As I waved her off I began regretting the fact that I haven't gotten to meet either one of them yet. I'm glad it hasn't been all at once though. My heart would probably explode from all the cute.

I step inside the barn and call out: "Hello? Applejack? It's me Coal. I'm here for my first real day!"

I hear muffled sounds and Applejack comes around from behind some barrels with a plow in her mouth. "Howdy there Coal!" Applejack stopped when she got a good look at what I was wearing. "Ain't ya kinda overdressed? Ah know ya can't do much hard stuff right now, but those look like really nice clothes."

I gave a small chuckle. "Rarity made these for me with working here in mind. They should be able to handle whatever I end up doing. I will probably have to end up commissioning a white T-shirt and some overalls though. Even if these clothes won't get damaged, I don't think I could wear them all the time. They are honestly just too nice!"

Applejack responded with a laugh of her own. "Yer right about that Coal. Ah really like the way she made ya look like an apple tree. Ah bet iff'n ya held still, ya could pass fer one!" She started laughing at her own joke. (I could pass for a tree huh?...I wonder what Fluttershy is doing later...I'm so fucking stupid sometimes it hurts!)

I just stood there and grinned at her. She has a cute laugh. As she was laughing I kept glancing at her lips (or muzzle....I'm just gonna call them lips alright!?). I was so out of it when she kissed me I couldn't enjoy it as much as I wanted. Thinking about it though didn't help my southern region any. "Darn it! I just took care of that!" I muttered under my breath berating myself for having so little control.

Applejack finally calmed down and we started off with a tour. She showed me where she kept the pigs, sheep, where the cows grazed. She showed me to the smaller fields where they grow other kinds of vegetables. Not to sell, but for themselves. Apples are great and all, but you can't eat just apples all the time. You would seriously start to hate them! The farm was huge, but there weren't a whole lot of things to show off. The most impressive being the actual apple

orchard.

It wasn't quiet noon yet and I was realizing that I skipped out on breakfast this morning in my haste to get here. Back on Earth I never ate breakfast. I had gone so many years having never eaten then; that I couldn't eat breakfast even if I wanted to! I would get stomach aches and cramps. It was really kinda weird, but after coming to Equestria, I found that I needed breakfast. It was both a blessing and at this point in time a curse. I did my best not to let Applejack know I was uncomfortable though. One thing I learned back on Earth is that nobody likes it when people complain. If you don't have anything nice to say; then shut the hell up! Life is hard enough as it is without every person bitching about every little thing! Whoa....sorry about that. I lost my cool there.

Aaanyway....Applejack finished the tour of the farm and brought me up to her house. "And this is our house. Ma grandparents built this baby many years ago. Granny Smith is inside probably asleep. Poor granny has been awful tired lately. Ah'm hoping ya can figure out that dag blasted paperwork! It would make life a lot easier on her."

"I'll do my best Applejack. Now um...is Big Mac around? I want to let him know there are no hard feelings for what happened..."

Applejack looked to be contemplating for a moment before looking back up at me. "Ah think he has left fer the day. He should be in town runnen our apple cart. He'll be back before sun down though. Iff'n yer around till then' ya'll get a chance ta' talk with him."

"Alrighty then. Have you kept sale records and shipping records? If I'm going to be able to do a good job with the paper work; I need to know where everything is going and how much is going out."

Applejack nodded and asked me to take a seat inside. She went upstairs and came back down holding a cardboard box filled with papers. I used to do work at a photography studio and they had the worst filing system I had ever seen....this was worse! She set the boxes down on the table and then she was going back to work.

I spent the next several hours just trying to get everything sorted! I swear I have never seen so many loose papers in all my life! They weren't particularly hard to understand, but the fact that they weren't in any conceivable order made it impossible to get a clear picture of anything. My first task was to organize by date and then by location. Applejack wasn't kidding when she says they ship their apples to a lot of places. Thankfully only about a half dozen barrels or so went to each location. Canterlot was the biggest city being shipped to, but they didn't actually buy all that much. I guess rich snobs only eat apples when nobody is looking...did I just insult ponies?.....I'm a horrible person!

I worked all day never stopping; not even for lunch. It wasn't like I was trying to impress any

pony; I was just so busy! I wanted to at least get everything sorted before the first day was over. It would make life a hell of a lot easier tomorrow; when I would sit down and make sure nobody is underpaying or receiving too many apples. You wouldn't think that is possible, but with two very young ponies trying to run a whole farm, and their only guardian is too old to catch anything like that; it isn't impossible. I was hoping I wouldn't come across that though. Ponies taking advantage of my employers didn't sit well with me; especially when my employers are the Apple family.....GOD THAT SOUNDS FUCKING AWESOME!

When seven rolled past Applejack came inside yawning a bit.

"Woo doggies! What ah d....." She saw me sitting at the table with piles of papers spread out. I hadn't really paid her any attention. I was too focused on what I was doing. "Coal?"

When I heard my name I looked up and realized Applejack came in. "Hey Applejack! How ya doing?"

"....Fine....have ya been worken in here this whole time? Ah thought ya went home hours ago." Applejack stepped into the kitchen and came out with two glasses of apple juice.

"Nope. I wanted to get all these papers sorted before I went home for the day. I haven't even gotten the chance to read them yet! Don't worry though; I'm almost done. I'll be able to sit down and read them starting tomorrow. By the way....do ponies have page binders? The clips that are used to hold a lot of loose pages together."

Applejack set the juice in front of me and took a long drink from hers. She lowered her head in contemplation before heading into the next room. She came back out in a few minutes with what I had asked for.

"Awesome Applejack! This will keep them from getting mixed up again." I grabbed my apple juice and downed it all in five seconds. "Bwaaa! That is some mighty fine juice ya got there AJ!"

Applejack chuckled at me. "It must be! Iff'n it gives ya ah country accent like mahself!" She gave me a playful nudge. I blushed a little realizing what I had done. I was about to explain myself when Applejack stopped me.

"Now don't start fretting about that sugarcube (that is still soo awesome!). Applebloom told me about what ya told her. Ah want ta' thank ya fer being so good to her."

"No need for thanks Applejack. Applebloom is an absolute sweetheart. I can only hope when I have a daughter someday; she'll be as well behaved and hard working as Applebloom."

Applejack beamed at the compliment. A look of surprise spread across her face as she glanced at the time. "Oh mai! It is almost time fer the...." She shoved her hoof in her mouth and looked

away.

"You Ok there AJ?"

Applejack calmed herself and looked back at me. "Now Coal, ya have done ah mighty fantastic job today; but ah need ya ta' call it good. It don't feel right maken an injured...human...work so hard. Why don't ya let me help ya bind up these pages that ya already finished sortten, and Ah'll walk ya home."

"That is very kind of you AJ, but you don't need to go so far out of your way. I'm sure I can make it back just fine."

"No no! Ah insist!"

I just shrugged and complied. I didn't want to get into an argument about something so trivial with Applejack. I know she can be really stubborn when she wants to be. Besides, if she wants so badly to walk me home....maybe she likes me? OK that was wishful thinking if I ever heard it! Damn brain! Stop losing out to Pinkie!....that was a very clever joke I must admit.

We bound up everything and put them neatly back into the boxes and set them to the side. I was sorry Applebloom wasn't around; I had wanted to say goodbye.

Applejack and I made our way out of the farm and through Ponyville. There was not a soul in sight. I was actually a little concerned and asked Applejack about it. She just said that they all probably went to bed early. She then hid her face from me.....wait....oh my.....now hold on just a second! Applejack wanted me to leave.....there is no pony in Ponyville....and Applejack just lied to me.....HOLY FUCKING SHIT! IT IS A PINKIE PIE PARTY! FUUUUUUUUUUUUCKK YEEEEEEEEEEEEES!!!!

I could hardly keep my excitement hidden! I wasn't 100% on it, but everything fits. It was all I could think about, and before I knew it we were at the library. The lights were off....this is a good sign, but I had to play it cool.

"Huh....I guess Twilight went to bed early. Well thanks Applejack. I guess I'll see you tomorrow."

Applejack looked like she was thinking very hard. "Hey Coal...would ya'll mind iff'n Ah stopped inside ta freshen up ah bit?"

A smile spread across my face. I imagine it looked sinister as hell, but I didn't care. "Not at all AJ! Please do come in!"

We stepped into the pitch blackness. I could hear some very soft whispers and my excitement almost boiled over. Suddenly the lights flashed on and there were dozens of ponies! They all

yelled out 'Surprise!', and even though I was expecting it....I was still a little off guard. I didn't expect soo many ponies! Whelp...better get back to my act.

"Wha.....surprise? What? What is going on?" I was smiling like a fool.

Just then my favorite pink pony came bouncing out of literally nowhere. She got right in my face and started spouting off what would of come across as nonsense had I not known she was just talking really fast. She bounced around me just spewing what could of been her life story for all I could understand. I just smiled and took a seat right there. I kept smiling at her and she continued to bounce around me; she noticed that I wasn't saying or doing anything and stopped right in front of me.

"Hey! Mr. Coal human thing! Why are you sitting down? This is a party! Parties are supposed to be full of fun and sitting isn't fun! Well it could be fun if you're playing a sitting game, but we aren't doing thaaat; or are we? Are we playing a game every pony?" She looked back to every pony and they just shook their heads while not blinking. They had no idea what was going on, or what I was doing.

"I take it you're Pinkie Pie, am I to assume you made this party for me?" I speak up making Pinkie jump a little.

"Yes-sir-ree-bobbing-for-apples! You know, most of the ponies I throw parties for get surprised at their welcoming party. How come you aren't surprised? Oh no! Did I do a bad job?" Pinkie gave me a sad look with those bright blue eyes. I almost fainted it was so freaking cute.

"Not at all Pinkie; I've been told plenty of times that I should never expect anything but the unexpected with you. Not saying that is a bad thing of course, but now Pinkie....it is my turn to surprise you!" I could hear Twilight, Dash, and even Applejack next to me let out a groan. I think they knew what was about to happen.

"Surprise me? How are you gonna surpri..." I cut her off pulling her into a big hug. I couldn't help it! I nuzzled my face against hers enjoying the smell of her mane (it smelled like baked goods). She was indeed a little surprised at first, but she quickly returned the gesture. I have to say....Pinkie gives awesome hugs.

"Alright alright you two; break it up. You're kinda starting to weird every pony out." Dash said breaking through the crowd.

I let go of Pinkie and gave a sheepish smile....I heard the *squee* sound that happens occasionally in the show and quickly turned red. I couldn't believe that I had made that adorable sound. I wanted to try again, but I doubted it would happen.

Pinkie gave me an adorable smile and then bounced off into the party. I got up and looked to Applejack.

"Just needed to freshen up a bit huh?"

Applejack blushed and rubbed the back of her head. "Ah don't like fibbing like that, but ah wanted ta' be here for yer welcome party. Ah hope yer not mad at me..."

"Do you even have to worry AJ? From now on every time you think I'm mad at you for something silly I'll....." I stopped talking and gave Applejack a wicked grin. She went bug eyed and stared back at me. "...I'll take those lips of yours!" I did my patented evil laugh. She didn't find it so amusing and looked genuinely scared. I got weird looks from every pony. "What? I can't joke around at my own party?" Every pony just laughed and went back about their business. I turned to Applejack and leaned in close. "I was only half joking....you couldn't make me mad at you if you tried." She gave a little chuckle and patted my back.

"Good ta' know Coal! Ah'll have ta' work ya real hard when yer better then!" We both laughed and went to mingle.

I spent the better part of two hours talking with various ponies. They were all very friendly and kept complimenting my clothes. I told them Rarity made them for me and I wouldn't trust any pony else more than her when it comes to fashion. I hoped it would boost business for her some more. Only time will tell I suppose.

After a while most of the ponies were comfortable with me and went back to mingling amongst themselves. I started looking around for any of the other girls, but was having a hard time finding them. I left the main room and entered a different section of the library; there I found all six of them talking around a punch bowl. They didn't hear me come in and before I could get their attention I heard Twilight say my name. I ducked behind a bookshelf and decided to eaves drop a bit. I know it isn't polite and makes me seem less trustworthy, but when else am I going to hear what they honestly think of me?

Chapter 16: Self Loathing

"He has been having nightmares the last couple of nights he has been here. I told him that if he wanted; we could talk about it. He hasn't been open about it to say the least." Twilight said matter of factly.

"What kind of nightmares has he been having darling?"

"Ooo-ooo-ooo! Is it about cakes deciding to eat me instead of me eating them? Cause that is a nightmare I have had before, and then there was this one time when I had a nightmare about..." Twilight shoved her hoof in Pinkie's mouth (hawt?).

"No Pinkie, it isn't anything like that."

"Well, did he tell ya anythen about it?" Applejack asked stifling a yawn.

"He told me what he thought it meant. Apparently he thinks his subconscious is telling him not to trust us. Coal told us a summary of his emotional growth when Rainbow first brought him to me. It was a horribly sad story, but it revealed to us that he has immense trust issues. The fact that he has been half as open to us as he has been....is actually rather amazing."

Dash nodded her head. "It was a tear jerker in my opinion. I won't lie...it got to me a bit, but Coal hasn't seemed all that sad to me. What would make him doubt us enough to have a dream like that?"

Fluttershy raised her hoof to get every pony's attention. "Well um....if you don't mind my saying; I think Coal is still getting adjusted to living here. If I was the only one of my kind in a place I never even knew existed before...I would be pretty scared and distrusting of others."

They all nodded in understanding.

"Oh I know! Coal is all grown up right? Well, maybe he should get a filly friend? That way he can have some pony to trust more than any pony!" Pinkie exclaimed with a smile on her face.

"That would be mighty fine and all, but Ah doubt Coal would like that. He is ah different species after all. He probably thinks we all look pretty funny." Applejack retorted.

"Ehehe" Twilight laughed nervously. "I haven't told all of you girls about what I overheard Coal talking to himself about....have I?" I went pale.

"Oh.My.Fucking.God! What did she hear!?" I was screaming at myself for ever having gotten into this stupid habit of talking to myself!

Dash tilted her head in contemplation. "No...you haven't told me anyway. Do any of you girls know what she is talking about?" The girls just shook their heads in unison.

My heart was beating faster than it ever had. I was so scared. What did she hear? How fucked am I? Is my life here over almost as soon as it began? I was near panic stricken, but all I could do was shut up and listen on.

Twilight gave a little sigh and blushed a bit before starting. "Well...on the day I first met Coal. I had to go pick up Spike from Rarity's. When I got back; I overheard Coal talking to himself. I know that is pretty rude, but I was far too curious to stop him. He was talking about how attractive he found us, and how he kept taking glances at our....flanks." Twilight was steaming after that last statement. The other girls weren't fairing much better. "He went on to talk about how he wanted a wife and kids, and how he felt that no pony would ever see him as more than

a friend. Coal is actually very hard on himself. He swore a lot. Calling himself names and just being really pessimistic. So actually; Coal already thinks of us as being well.....mares. He thinks of us like how a stallion would think of a mare."

The girls were slack jawed, and I was nearly on the verge of tears. There was no going back from this. My new life, my new friends, it all felt like it was being torn from me.

Rarity was the first to respond. "I remember you telling me that darling. I didn't know he was looking at us though. I'm not sure how I feel about that."

Dash was the next to respond. "He told Fluttershy and me that he thought of us as mares...you know...romantically. It didn't bother us too much though, but I didn't think he was getting hot and bothered by us!"

"He has been awful huggy. Ah can't believe Ah trusted him. Ah wonder how much he has been enjoying those hugs and what not." Applejack turned red with a mixture of shame and anger. "And that kiss! Oh my stars Big Mac was right! He probably didn't even think he was dying! He just wanted ta' get something!"

All the girls except Twilight and Pinkie started looking real angry. I just wanted to curl up and die. I couldn't stop it anymore. I was crying. I had ruined my one chance at happiness here. I guess I could always leave Ponyville, but where would I go? Who would accept me? That is only assuming Twilight didn't send me back before I left. I just let the tears fall down my face and got up and left. I walked through the party goers and made my way outside. I didn't know where I was going, but I just needed some time to myself.

* * * *

"Applejack calm down!" Twilight exclaimed. "What is wrong with Coal being attracted to us?"

All of them stopped fuming and looked at Twilight suggestively.

"What do ya mean 'what is wrong' with it!? He has been huggen us and rubbin on us ever since he got here! Ah bet he has been harboring a lot more dirty stuff in mind than that too!"

Twilight shook her head. "Even if he has been; he has still been an amazing friend. He forgave Big Mac before he even knew he was going to be OK didn't he?"

"Well yeah, but..."

"No buts! Coal has been kind and respectful to all of us! Yes he has been rather huggy, but he never once tried to take advantage of any of us; right?"

All the girls looked down and nodded.

"Now I told you all about that not so you would get mad and hate him! I knew about it since day one and it hasn't bothered me. I for one am going to continue to be his friend! I won't force you girls to still like or trust him after this, but....I think you'll be losing a good friend if you don't."

The girls looked at each other, and then they looked back down solemnly.

Applejack was the first to respond this time. "Yer right Twi'. It doesn't matter if Coal thinks we're purty or not. He has been ah really good friend.....Ah feel bad now. Ah shouldn't of turned on him like that."

"You're right darling. I don't know why I was bothered by him looking at me. If anything I should be flattered! I can turn the heads of males even of a different species!" The girls gave Rarity a deadpanned expression. Rarity cleared her throat and said: "Oh yes well I mean...we all can turn the heads of.....OH! You all know what I mean!" Rarity looked off flustered.

They all laughed a little at their friend's expense.

"Hey don't worry about it Rarity!" Dash voiced. "But I guess that means we should be a little more sensitive with Coal. I kinda teased him trying to scare him the other day, and ended up on top of him. Looking back...that probably put him in a weird position."

Pinkie started bouncing again. "Yay! Coal likes ponies too! He seems nice; maybe I should ask him to help me bake cupcakes sometime."

The others gawked at Pinkie; who just kept giggling.

"Do...do you like Coal...like that Pinkie? If you don't mind my asking....you don't have to answer....if you don't want to." Fluttershy said timidly.

"I don't know silly! I just met him a few hours ago, but I don't see any reason not to get to know him better! Who knows; maybe I will like him more."

The girls finished talking amongst themselves and went back to join the party.

"Ah feel like ah need to apologize to Coal now. Ah can't believe how angry Ah got...Ah don't even know why now." Applejack stated rather drearily.

"Don't worry about it AJ! If Coal can forgive Big Mac for hurting him the way he did; then Coal could probably forgive you for being put off by his feelings for us." Dash replied in high spirits.

"Could ya'll not bring that up anymore? Ah still feel bad enough about it as is."

The girls nodded and made a mental note not to mention it again.

They got to looking for Coal, but quickly found that he wasn't there. They started asking ponies if they had seen him and one such pony said they saw him leave the library about thirty minutes ago. They hadn't seen him since. This concerned the girls, but they didn't know why.

They quickly left the party and stepped outside. It was nearly winter in Equestria and the nights were pretty cold. Twilight was worried that Coal may get sick being out in this weather in his current condition. They started asking each other; 'Why would he leave like that?'

They started searching around town and quickly started to worry more as an almost freezing gust of air whipped through their manes. They picked up their pace starting to fear the worst.

"What if he ran off?" Dash asked

"Why would he do that though?" Twilight asked lifting her head from a bush.

"What if he heard us talking....." Fluttershy asked looking horrified.

The girls all went pale.

"Oh no...." Twilight was starting to hyperventilate. "He has a hard time trusting any pony as it is....if he heard us.....oh Celestia...."

Applejack looked at Twilight with tears starting to pool in her eyes. "It's all mah fault! Ah bet he heard all those horrible things Ah said! He hates us now cause ah me! Ah just know it!" Applejack hung her head fighting back guilt.

"We don't know that darling! We may just be blowing this whole thing out of proportion! He could of just gone out for some air. We don't know what the weather is like where is from, maybe he likes the cold." Rarity stated trying to reassure Applejack.

Applejack looked up at her and nodded.

"You know what!? I'm tired of this lazy search! I'm taking this to max speed! I'm going to find him in ten seconds flat!" Dash yelled before taking off leaving large smoke flash in her wake.

The others decided it was best to get back to the party. When they got back Twilight decided it was time to wrap things up. Pinkie put on her 'it is time to leave music', every pony knew what it meant. They slowly shuffled their way out of the library and started heading home for the night.

"I guess we should clean this place up. When Rainbow finds Coal, I'm sure he won't want to

come back to a dirty house." Twilight stated flatly.

The girls started cleaning half heartedly; their hearts going out to Dash in hope that she'll find Coal.

Shortly after they finished and were sitting around the fireplace enjoying some hot chocolate; Dash burst in through the front door panting. "I found him! Come on! Lets go!"

The girls quickly ran after Dash who had already started leading them towards the Everfree Forest. They ran past Fluttershy's cottage and quickly stopped at the edge of the forest when they heard singing. It was Coal. He was sitting in a tree looking to the moon. They stood silently listening to the lyrics Coal was passively singing.

"..when the call came down the line...up to the platform of surrender...I was brought, but I was kind...and sometimes I get nervous...when I see an open door...close your eyes, clear your heart.....cut the cord...are we human...or are we dancer? My sign is vital, my hands are cold...and I'm on my knees looking for the answer...are we human or are we dancer?"

They waited patiently absorbing every word. When Coal finished he let out a long hard sigh.

"They know everything...they know my feelings...they know my weaknesses...they know my shame." Coal closed his eyes and looked to the ground. He sighed again and looked back up at the moon. He had a look of anger on his face that the girls had never seen. What the girls heard next...both shocked and scared them.

"Why in the name of almighty God am I such a worthless little bitch!?" Coal yelled out to nobody particular. "Why do I always fuck everything up!? Why can't I ever do anything right!?" Coal stood up on the tree's branch putting his hand on the trunk to keep his balance. Coal put his free hand on the top of his head and started yelling. He didn't yell words. He just yelled out until he coughed and choked.

The girls were shaking. They had never seen such a display of emotion. Their fears were realized. Coal had hear them; this they believed. If only they knew that he had heard all of it. Then their hearts may have been calmed, but for now; they could only stare and wait silently.

"This is so fucking stupid! Why do I bother!? I'm never going to amount to anything! I was a loser back home for good reason! I'm lazy, stupid, selfish, greedy, lustful, and pathetic! Should I even wonder why I didn't have any friends or love!? The answer is pretty clear to me! I. just. fuck. up. everything." Coal sat back down and groaned. "And here I am feeling sorry for myself. Again. Nothing new there. Old hat, been there done that, same old dog same old trick. I'm glad the girls don't trust me now....it is probably for the best. You know....I got in trouble in the first place for talking to myself, and here I am doing it all over again! WHAT THE FUCK IS WRONG WITH ME!? DO I NEVER LEARN MY LESSON!? AM I GOING TO MAKE THE SAME WORTHLESS

MISTAKES AGAIN AND AGAIN!?" Coal continued to yell and scream pouring out every last drop of anger and depression he had in him.

The girls couldn't take it anymore. They left Coal. Sitting in the tree; just yelling to no pony, but himself.

They all went back to the library and warmed up by the fire. Not a word was spoken for several minutes. They all just couldn't comprehend what they had heard. Their new friend, was out there saying the most unbelievable things they could imagine. They all broke down...and cried. Cried for Coal and cried because they felt it was their fault.

After several minutes Twilight had calmed enough to start talking again. "*sniffle*" So...yeah...Coal is harder on himself than any of us could ever be, but I guess you all know that now...*hiccup**"

"Ah can't believe what Ah just heard. Ah have never heard no pony ever cuss like that at anythin'. Ah...don't know what ta' think anymore." Applejack lowered her head in defeat.

"We shouldn't of left him there; he needs comfort right now...not that I'm mad at you girls for leaving. I left too...I was just too scared." Fluttershy said while twiddling her hooves.

Pinkie's hair had deflated a little and was looking a little sour. "Tonight was supposed to be a happy night. Not a super-ultra-mega-notcoolcauseCoalismad-night!"

"I think he is just being a baby!" Dash said in-between sniffles. "He is just feeling sorry for himself."

"Dash darling...you know that isn't fair. We...we are all Coal has in this world. He...he thinks he has lost us." Rarity said wiping away the dripping makeup from her face.

Dash looked at Rarity and tried to fight back the sob that was welling up inside. She couldn't hold it in and began to shake. "I know...I just...I don't know what to do! Coal looked like he was ready to kill something! I've never seen some pony look so angry before..."

"I think we need to give Coal some time. We shouldn't tell him we know about what he said and...we should treat him like we had never heard it." Twilight stated having regained most of her composure.

"That is probably fer the best sugarcube. Ah'll try, but Ah don't think Ah'll be able to look at Coal the same...fer ah while anyway."

"As long as you try Applejack; I'm sure that will be enough." Twilight put her hoof on Applejack reassuringly.

The others nodded in agreement. They sat there for another hour, and when Coal hadn't come back yet; they decided it was time they all went home.

"If I see Coal...I'll try and get him to come home Twilight. If it is really cold...I may ask him to spend the night at my cottage." Fluttershy said rather assertively.

"Thanks Fluttershy..." Twilight gave her a hug and waved her off. The others followed and Twilight was left alone to worry.

* * * *

Author's notes: Not so Fun Fact: Pessimism and self doubt/loathing what have you, are couple more weakness of the character. I can't say I like him all that much...(if you get this dark joke...you guys are some kind of awesome) Also, the song is ['Human' by The Killers](#). **(Listen to it. He's right, it's a good song.)** I like it anyway.

Chapter 17: Mornings are Awkward

Authors notes: *sigh* I just...I just don't know sometimes guys. I know for a fact that at least one person out there is going to enjoy the following (you know who you are(but you're awesome for it)). The rest of you will probably be like: 'You self indulgent tool'. To which I will reply: 'I know, right!?'

"Well...I'd be lying if I said I didn't feel better." I was not happy. That much is pretty clear. I was a bit cold, but I didn't want to go back yet. I had no idea what time it was, but I didn't care. I know full well that the girls weren't gonna treat me much differently; but again, I didn't care. The fact that they knew now how I felt; was enough to piss me off. I wasn't mad at them though. They hadn't done a thing wrong. I was mad at myself for being such an ass. I would of probably kept on berating myself, but my throat was really starting to hurt and thinking hate at myself wasn't the same.

I sat there for a long while still. Eventually I got tired enough to make the trek back to the library. Hopefully the girls hadn't noticed I was gone and would still be enjoying the party. I was starting to head back when I saw a pink mane coming in the distance. It was Fluttershy (of course), and she looked pretty damn sad! She was looking down at the ground and didn't see me. She would of walked right into me if I hadn't spoken up.

"Fluttershy? What has got you so down?"

She jumped back startled. She looked at me with big eyes and looked like she was trying to scream, but couldn't. "C-c-c-coal! I d-d-didn't see you there! Oh....I'm sorry...I didn't mean to yell."

"Not a problem Fluttershy, but still...are you alright? You look like you've been crying. Did something happen at the party? I left a while ago to get some air and some time to myself." I reached out to touch Fluttershy reassuringly, but she pulled back away from my touch.

"F-Fluttershy? Yo-your starting to scare me..." She quickly put on an apologetic face and walked up to me. She looked into my eyes with a small smile on her face. She nuzzled my leg and looked back up at me.

"Sorry Coal, I didn't mean to. I just have a lot on my mind is all...I hope that is OK..."

"Of course!" Fluttershy cringed at my increased volume. "Oops...sorry. I just didn't want you sad Fluttershy. You're too important to me for me to let you be sad."

She gave me a big smile and said "I know Coal...and thank-you." A gust of wind whipped past and made Fluttershy shiver.

"We should probably get you home. Do you want me to walk with you?"

She thought for a moment and nodded. I turned around and walked with Fluttershy the short distance to her cottage. When we got to the door I was about to turn to leave when she grabbed my pants leg.

"D-don't leave Coal...that is...if you don't mind. I...I would like for you to stay here tonight." She gave me a sheepish smile and then hid her face.

"If you're worried about me...you don't need to be. I'll be fine. It was very windy where I grew up, so I'm used to it. Besides if you're out walking around then the party is probably over. I don't want Twilight to worry any."

Fluttershy nodded and waved me off before heading inside. I waved back and then quickly made my way back to the library. I hadn't run any since I got to Equestria, and even though I was still pretty hurt from what happened with Big Mac; I really enjoyed running. I never ran much back on Earth. I didn't have any place to run. The sidewalks where I lived were really broken and uneven. I would most likely fall and hurt myself if I tried to run on them. I wasn't about to run in the streets because I always hated that when others did it. But now I had an even (for the most part) dirt path to run on, and I enjoyed every second of it.

I'm not a fast runner, but I made pretty good time getting back to the library. I stopped at the door to catch my breath before heading inside. I found that the party must have been long since over. The library looked like a party had never happened. I found Twilight asleep on the hard floor near the fireplace. I couldn't bring myself to pick her up and move her to bed. If she was a light sleeper then I would potential wake her. I went upstairs and grabbed Twilight's blanket from her bed, and draped it over her. She looked like she was having a really rough night. She looked

to be in some sort of pain; even in her sleep. I got down next to her and gently pulled myself in close. Being a lot bigger than her made it easy for me to basically envelope her. My stomach was to her back and we were basically spooning. Thankfully I didn't have anything remotely sexual on my mind. I was simply too tired and worried about Twilight to pay that kind of stuff any heed. I rested my head on my arm, and put my other one around her. I rubbed the end of her hoof while she slept. It seemed to relax her a little, but she still looked to be pained. I watched her sleep for a short while before sleep took hold of me.

* * * *

Twilight was the first to wake up today. She opened her eyes and the memories of last night started slowly returning to her. She tried to stand up, but found that she was being slightly held down. She realized that Coal had come in the night and had gone to sleep right next to her. His arm was draped lazily over her and was gently pinning her in place. For once Coal seemed to be sleeping soundly, so Twilight decided to wait a little while before getting up.

She managed to roll over and get a good look at Coal. He looked peaceful with his mouth hanging open ever-so slightly. If last night hadn't been so traumatizing for her and the others; she probably would of thought it cute. She just couldn't help but look at Coal with pained eyes. She wanted to let him know that he didn't need to worry; that he was their friend whether he liked it or not. But she couldn't. She knew Coal would probably figure out that she had heard him last night if she tried. She could always try to lie, but doubted Coal would fall for it. Coal started mumbling in his sleep and Twilight strained her ears to hear it.

"mmm Tw-twilight mmnnnn.....ah'm nnnhuh"

Twilight felt a tug at her heart. She knew Coal had some kind of feelings for her, but didn't know if they were more than physical. She thought back to the time they had spent together. There were several fun moments, and then she remembered what Pinkie had said. 'Maybe he just needs a filly friend' the thought made her blush. She wasn't sure if she had any feelings for Coal as being more than friend, but given everything that had happened....she wanted to make him feel better. She looked at his lips and thought back to what Applejack had told her when Coal was still in the hospital asleep.

'It was very soft. A lot softer then ya would think. Ah guess it is a human thing ta' have lips like that. Ah had kissed ah colt or two before, but they weren't as sweet as this one was. It tasted like apples. Ah guess cause we had been eaten 'em hehe.'

Twilight turned red realizing what she was about to do. She closed her eyes and ever-so slowly started leaning in. It felt like an eternity before their lips met. When they did; it was like a spark went through her body. Even though Coal was asleep; his body reacted to the contact. He pulled his arm in closer pulling her in. She was scared he had woken up and was going to take advantage of her, but calmed down when she realized he was still asleep. Shocked by his

movement she had pulled back breaking the kiss. She licked her lips a little; not sure if it tasted like anything. She looked back at Coal and started to feel warm again.

She leaned in a second time; a little more quickly than the first. She pressed her lips softly onto his. She didn't expect to enjoy it as much as she was. Applejack was right; they were soft. She had been kissed once before back in Canterlot. The colt that had kissed her before had done it without her consent. She remembered it was hard and violating. She was put off of such things for the longest time, but now it felt...good. She couldn't taste anything though. She was about to pull back again when Coal's tongue found its way into her mouth. Her eyes went as-big-as saucers at the contact. It wasn't as big proportionally as a pony's, but Coal being so much bigger; it wasn't that small either. Coal's arm moved again holding her head in place. She couldn't pull back now without waking Coal up, and how would she explain this anyway? She was stuck there. Coal's tongue started to twitch a little reacting to the new environment it had found itself in. Twilight was panicking. She didn't know how to deal with what was happening. Her mind went blank, and her body started to react how it wanted.

She found her tongue was wrapping itself around Coal's. She could taste him now. He tasted like punch and maybe morning dew. Her tongue found its way into Coal's mouth. It was moving around slowly and with great delicacy. Her eyes started to roll into the back of her head as she found herself enjoying it more and more. Coal was starting to moan in his sleep. He didn't have them often, but has had sex dreams before. Being the deep sleeper that he is and with an imagination as big as his; he started caressing her cheek. She blinked in fear that he had woken up this time, but calmed again when knowing he hadn't. The touch was warm and soft and she was enjoying it. She started to kiss him deeper. It felt so good having his tongue rub against hers. His hand rubbing her so gently. Time started to slow. She put her hooves around him and pulled herself closer to him. She was loving this moment. She felt safe, she felt warm, she felt at peace. She started wishing the moment wouldn't end, but it soon did. Coal started to come to. Realizing this; Twilight forced herself out of his grasp and ran into the kitchen. Her heart was beating out of her chest. She had to calm down; Coal was waking up after all.

* * * *

Author's notes: Fun fact! I have a poster in my room that depicts four of the main six done in 'steam-punk'. After having written this chapter the first time; I went to the picture of Twilight and apologized for like 5 minutes! I crack myself up sometimes!

Chapter 18: Getting down to Business

"Mmmm...what a pleasant dream for a change." It was nice to wake up without having a nightmare or finding out you had been asleep for days. "Huh?...did I eat fruit cake last night?" I licked my lips and found the slightest taste of a confection I didn't remember having. I soon remembered that I had fallen asleep next to Twilight, and that she wasn't there. "Twilight? Are you here?"

"Y-y-yes Coal...I'm here..." I heard Twilight say softly from the kitchen.

"You alright Twilight?"

"Yes! I-I mean yes. I'm fine Coal."

"Good...so um....about last night. Sorry about leaving like that. I had a lot of stuff on my mind, and needed some time to myself. I hope you didn't worry about me any."

Twilight came out of the kitchen looking a bit flustered. She had some water splashed on her face and her mane was a bit messy. "Well Coal...I did worry. I wish you had told me that you were stepping out. I know you're a big guy and can take care of yourself, but you're still getting over being hurt. It was also pretty cold last night. I didn't want you getting stuck somewhere or lost."

"I'm sorry Twilight...I didn't mean to make you worry. I promise I'll never do that again. Scouts honor!"

"What?"

"Heheh! I was a boy scout back on Earth when I was little. It doesn't really mean anything; I was just being silly."

Twilight chuckled a little and looked away. She looked like she had a lot on her mind.

"Are you really really sure nothing is bothering you? You look like you're really troubled."

Twilight quickly put her back to me and dropped her head. "No no Coal! I'm fine...really! I was just thinking about how I need to let the girls know that you're alright if I see them before you do."

"Oh...okay Twilight. I'll stop bothering you about it then."

The rest of the morning went by pretty peacefully in my opinion. We ate breakfast, I took a shower, and got back into my work clothes (after Twilight washed them for me of course. Magic is awesome...have I mentioned that yet?). I said my goodbyes to Twilight and made my way to 'work'.

The walk was peaceful and even after my 'freak out' last night; I was feeling awesome. I couldn't put my finger on as to why, but I did. When I got to the farm I saw Applebloom. She was busy sorting bruised apples into baskets. I didn't want to bother her so I just went on into the farm house. When I walked in I was greeted by Big Mac.....Awwkwaaaard!

"Hey Big Mac....good to see you."

"Howdy Coal...you too."

"Umm...about what happened before; I don't want you to worry about it." I reached my hand out for a hand/hoof shake. "No hard feelings?"

He took my hand and gave it a strong shake. "No hard feelings...and Ah'm sorry fer what Ah did."

"You're forgiven. I hope we can be friends from now on."

Big Mac put on a soft smile. "Eeeeyup"

After that pleasantness was over; I got back to work sorting the papers. I was wondering where Applejack was, but after last night I figured she would probably want to keep her distance. She may have changed her opinion, but the feelings are probably still there. I was enjoying the peace though. After another hour of sorting it was finally time to start going over each town's paperwork individually. I started with Ponyville's since I assumed it would be the easiest and most looked at. For the most part it made sense. There was the price of each apple, the price of buying by the barrel. The amount of apples used to make up a barrel. The amount received, and number of barrels sent out. It really wasn't hard at all to figure out. You just had to divide the number of barrels by the amount received and compare that to the price of a barrel. It should of been that easy, but there were some X factors. Not all barrels would have the same number of apples. The rates were different depending on the time of purchase. The Apple family had to refund money based off of bad apples. Which is actually where most of the problems were. The towns were asking for the money back for the price of individual apples. Not the discounted price for buying barrels. If you bought a barrel; it was 10% cheaper than if you bought a barrel's amount of apples individually. I'm not sure if the Mayor knew about this, or even if she had a hoof in it at all; but it left a bad taste in my mouth. I went over these numbers for each town's apple shipments (which took all damn day by the way! Again, no lunch! Damn I was fucking hungry!) and found that the Apples have lost thousands of bits by returning too much. You wouldn't think that, but when you deal tens of thousands of apples over the span of several years; it adds up. I hadn't looked at all of the other information yet, but this discovery alone would make a world of difference. It was at this time that Applejack finally made an appearance. It was almost 7 pm. again too.

"Hey Applejack...I got some news for ya."

Applejack gave me a little wave and a half hearted smile before walking over to me. "What didja find Coal?"

"I haven't gone over all the numbers, but I already found a huge problem with your return policy. You have been returning the money for bruised apples based on individual price. Not on the discounted price for buying by the barrel; which is what every town goes by. You've lost thousands of bits over the past five years because of this."

Applejack went slack jawed. "Ah can't believe this! How could we have been so stupid! Thank ya so much for findin this out Coal!" She gave me a big hug, but quickly pulled back with a shocked look on her face and an apologetic smile.

"Heheh, don't worry about it Applejack. There isn't going to be any way to get your money back, but as long as you aren't returning by individual price anymore; the farm should make more of a profit. I'm a little curious though...how do all these bad apples get in the barrels anyway? I saw Applebloom sorting them when I arrived today."

"Oh those are fer the applectart. It would take too long ta' sort fer all the apples that go through here. So we just have each town keep track and send us a report."

"That is another thing Applejack. I know this world isn't like mine, and that ponies are probably a lot more honest, but....how are you sure that they aren't fudging the numbers any?"

"We have them send back the bad apples with the report. We count em up and then send back their refund."

"Good thinking. Anyway Applejack that's all I've got for you today. I'm calling it good. I'll be back tomorrow to get back at it."

Applejack nodded and said her goodbyes. I was a little disappointed she didn't ask me to stay for dinner, but I guess I am just an employee. It was stupid of me to even consider anyway. Applejack may get used to me again with time, but it probably won't be soon. I made my way back to Twilight's thinking about what I should get to eat. I was thinking....apples. I could really go for an apple.

Chapter 19: Girl Time

Author's notes: What is the hardest part of writing for me? Trying to remember what characters know what. Occasionally I need to write a chapter like this. It makes life a lot easier on me. At least we get some nice interactions from the girls. :D

After Coal had left for work Twilight had to take a good long sit and think about what had happened. She had made out with him...and liked it. She felt both guilty and empty. She enjoyed it yes, but it was without Coal's consent and there was only half the emotion behind it. Coal may be attracted to them, but she didn't know if he loved her like that. She eventually had to force herself to put it out of her mind. The best way to do that is to have another get together with the

girls.

Twilight wrote up a few invitations to a late lunch get together at a local cafe'. She sent them off with a spell and proceeded to make her way there. It was still a couple hours away, but she didn't want to stay in-doors at the moment. Some fresh, clean, crisp cool air would do her wonders. She made her way to the cafe' and much to her surprise Applejack was already there.

"Hi Applejack; not that I'm unhappy to see you, but...what are you doing here so early?"

"Howdy Twilight...Ah just couldn't stay at the farm knowin Coal was comin over. Ah saw him talken with Big Mac as Ah was leaven. Ah just couldn't face him after last night." Applejack looked away from Twilight letting her mind wander for a moment before returning her attention.

"I understand Applejack. Things got weird after you le....." Twilight stuck her hoof in her mouth stopping herself from talking. She was about to let Applejack know what had happened. She didn't think she could live it down if Applejack knew.

"After Ah left? Is that what ya were gonna say? What happened?"

"Nothing! Nothing at all happened ahahahah!" Twilight was starting to sweat she was so nervous.

Applejack gave her a piercing look and said flatly: "Ah know when yer lien ta' me Twi'. Yer not ah good liar. Now are ya gonna tell me what happened? or do ah need ta' ask Coal?"

Twilight sighed in defeat. She had screwed herself, and she knew it. All she could do now was buy time. May as well tell every pony. It would give her an excuse to prepare herself. "Coal doesn't know about it. I'll tell every pony when they get here. I should probably talk about it anyway. It isn't going to go away even if I hide it..." Twilight hung her head and took a seat at the same table as Applejack. She sighed and groaned in fear of telling her friends what had happened. She would of started to tear up if she thought they wouldn't understand. She was glad that she could trust her friends. They were the most important ponies she had ever known.

"Well alrighty Twi', but Ah'ma hold ya to it!" Applejack said firmly.

Twilight nodded and started going over in her head how she would break it to them.

A couple hours passed and one by one the others started showing up. They were waiting on Fluttershy now. They each had their own drinks and were sipping from them casually. After another fifteen minutes Fluttershy showed up and all attention was on Twilight.

"Alright Twilight! You have to tell us what happened now. All this waiting has been killing me! I hate waiting!" Dash exclaimed loudly.

"Keep your voice down Rainbow. I'm sure Twilight doesn't appreciate the forcefulness. Now all the same Twilight....I'm very curious too. What did happen dear?" Rarity asked with some gentleness.

"*groan* I can't believe I'm telling all of you this. It is so embarrassing!" Twilight held her face in her hooves shaking her head.

"Come on you silly-filly-willy-billy! We're your friends! We won't judge you! Please Twilight? Pretty please with sugar and frosting and sprinkles and cherries and hot sauce on top?" Pinkie begged.

"Ok ok, calm down Pinkie. I'm going to tell all of you...it's just really hard to admit."

"Twilight I don't mind leaving if it will make things easier on you...if you want." Fluttershy's voice was barely over a whisper. She actually really wanted to hear it too, but would do anything to make it easier on Twilight.

"No no Fluttershy, that isn't necessary." Twilight took several deep breaths trying to calm herself. "Now girls...I don't want to be interrupted. Please just let me finish and then you can all make your comments. I don't think I'll be able to start up again if I have to stop."

They all silently nodded eager to find out what had made Twilight so nervous.

"Ok...last night, well...this morning I should say. I woke up to find Coal sleeping right next to me." Every pony let out a small gasp, but Twilight ignored it. "He hadn't done anything! I don't want any pony thinking that. He was just sleeping there. If I had to guess; he probably got back to find me asleep and tried to make me more comfortable. I had fallen asleep on the floor and when I woke up there was a blanket that had been moved around a bit during the night. Coal probably only meant to rest for a moment, but ended up falling asleep. Anyway, I wake up and Coal has his arm over me. He looked like he was actually having a peaceful sleep for a change, so I didn't want to wake him. I rolled over to get a better look at him and well...I started thinking." The girls were hanging on Twilight's every word.

They weren't aware that other patrons were listening in as well (including the waitress). "I started thinking back to when Applejack...kissed Coal when she thought he was dying." All eyes went to Applejack who was blushing furiously and then back to Twilight. "I thought about Applejack telling me about it; how it was very soft and tasted like apples. I had only been kissed once before and it...it wasn't pleasant to say the least. So I got...curious and ended up kissing Coal." more gasps were heard, but again ignored. "That is basically it. No I don't think I love Coal and I really regret what I did. I guess my body just took control of me and I ended up taking advantage of him. Well that is it...you can all start making your comments and passing your judgments now." Twilight slowly looked up from her hooves and found five pairs of unblinking

eyes just locked onto her. Their jaws as loose as can be.

They all wanted to say something, but all they could get out were incoherent noises and half-words. Twilight buried her face in her hooves again. She was ashamed, but didn't cry. They didn't look mad at her and she took some solace in that. The other patrons (and waitress) had since gone back about their business a little more sensitive to their surroundings. After several more minutes of just nonsense followed by silence, Dash managed to actually start talking.

"Th-that...that is really weird Twilight. You...you never really struck me as a mare THAT interested in...you know; contact." Dash was rubbing the back of her head worried that she wasn't wording it well.

"I'm really not! Honest! I normally would never even consider that sort of thing! I just felt so bad for Coal and-and-and..." Twilight pleaded shaking her head sporadically. With Twilight being very defensive; it was enough for Applejack to snap out of it.

"Well Twi' its just...a lot to take in. We've all had a colt friend at one time or another Ah think, but...Ah certainly didn't have anythen like that happen. Ah guess we didn't live in the same house either though. Maybe it is time ta' find Coal a place of his own. Ah believe ya when you say that you like, but not love him. Ah'll be honest...Ah feel the same way..." All eyes went to Applejack. "Now don't get me wrong alright! Ah just mean that Coal has been really easy ta' like...when he isn't by himself. Ah swear that was painful listening ta'." Every pony looked at each other and nodded in agreement. "But when he is with me, or any of us Ah would guess...he is always really nice. Ah think Ah got so mad about him thinking Ah were purty last night, cause a part me kinda like it." Applejack was managing to keep her cool; even though she was saying such things.

"I guess I can understand that. He was pretty awesome when he carried me out of the forest; back on his first day here. Looking back it was really weird though, and honestly...it was very stupid! At the time I didn't know anything about Coal, and yet he was able to talk me down and even convinced me to let him carry me back to Fluttershy's. I was really hurt yes, but no more so that usual. I could of probably made it back alright, but when he looked at me with those green eyes of his....I just kind of...didn't know what to think." Dash had troubled look on her face as she thought back to everything that had happened.

Rarity cleared her throat and took a long sip from the tea she had ordered. "Well darlings...I for one don't think this is too big of a deal." That statement snapped Dash and every other pony out of their mental stupors immediately. She was the center of attention of the whole table with a single sentence. "It wasn't like it was pre-meditated or anything. It was early morning and Twilight had just woken up to find herself in the arms of a male. We may be adults now, but we are still very young adults. I think I can make my point better understood if I tell the rest of you a little story." Even though Rarity hadn't asked a question, all heads were bobbing in anxiety for what she was about to say. "When I first met Coal; it was after my break up with that foal of a

stallion. Coal was very kind and offered to help clean up my shop. It had gotten destroyed with my little tirade against that stallion. He didn't ask for anything in return, but I wouldn't stand for that. I offered to pay him something, and he said I could pay him in clothes for his help. I loved the idea, and after some more time together I remember throwing out the comment that I was stressed. Coal mentions that back where he is from...Earth...that he was really good at giving others massages."

Applejack gasped a little thinking back to when Coal had given her leg one. "After we finished cleaning and Coal takes a shower; he comes back down and has me get ready for it. Twilight already knows, but...it was the most wonderful thing I had ever felt. Those fingers of his were magical. They were soft and smooth, but firm. He applied pressure to all the right areas and was gentle with the rest. It wasn't anything suggestive, but it felt so good that I actually got...excited." Twilight blushed thinking back, but the others were way past just blushing. "Anyway, ending this long story short; I got excited and ran off. Coal still doesn't know what happened back then, but hasn't pried into it; much to my relief. The point is girls; even if Coal isn't a pony; he is still a male with several things going for him. If he wasn't so hard on himself when alone; he would probably be one of the nicest males I have ever met. He really still is, but...he is a lot scarier knowing that there is such vast amounts of unhappiness in him."

The others sat in silence for several more minutes; digesting all this new information. Fluttershy decided to voice her own concerns. "Well um...what is there to do now then? I don't think what happened was all that bad...as long as if Coal finds out he doesn't mind. I don't think we should tell him yet though...if you don't mind."

"Well that was a big surprise Twilight and Applejack and Rarity! When did you three get so good at surprises!?" Pinkie exclaimed as light heartedly as ever.

"Calm down Pinkie. I *sigh* I just needed to get that off of my chest. My reasoning for it is the same as last night. I didn't tell every pony that so that you'll freak out. I think you're right though Applejack. It is time that we find a place for Coal. I'll talk with him about it when he gets back from your place tonight. I hope he won't be offended though. I honestly enjoy his company, but for my own peace of mind it is probably time." Twilight stood up from the table and stretched herself before sitting back down. She had calmed down immensely.

"Where is he going to stay though? I wouldn't mind taking him off your hooves. This has all been pretty weird, but I think he is a nice enough guy. That is if it weren't impossible for him to get up to my house...clouds ya know?" Dash took a big drink from her soda and started stretched her wings.

"I wouldn't mind housing him for a while...if he didn't mind. I just hope he likes animals." Fluttershy stated while hiding her face.

"Girls...you're missing the point. The only reason I'm trying to get Coal out is because there is a

lot of tension with us living together. Coal is a male and we are all female. We all know that he finds us attractive, and I think to some degree we aren't really turned off by his appearance either. I'm not anyway. It just isn't a good idea for a colt and filly to be living together alone like that. If Spike weren't still in Canterlot it may not be so bad, but he is...and it is..."

Dash interrupted Twilight's little speech to voice her own thoughts. "Coal actually said the same thing his first day here." All eyes were on Dash. "What? It isn't that surprising. Coal just said 'that a guy and a girl living together just isn't proper'. He wanted to know if we had any colt friends to bunk with."

"Well...he can stay in mah barn iff'n he likes. Ah'll have to talk with Big Mac about it though. Iff'n Big Mac isn't against the idea then we can try talkin Coal into it. Ah think he better spend one last night at your place though Twi'. Ya might wanna make sure he knows that it isn't because ya don't like him none; that he is being asked to move."

Twilight nodded in agreement. The girls spent a few more hours together talking about whatever came to mind, but all of them couldn't get a certain human out of their heads for the rest of the day.

Chapter 20: Moving on

Have I mentioned how much I love the air in Equestria? It is so clean and refreshing. I've been cooped at a desk all day (wow!...de ja vu) and yet this air is all I need to feel like a million bucks!...bits!

When I get back to the library I immediately knew something was up. Twilight wasn't reading or writing or anything. She was just sitting at her desk staring off into space.

"Hey Twilight...I'm back." She turns to face me and gives me a rather sad looking smile.

"Hi Coal...can we talk?"

"Words!" I burst out.

Twilight was startled at my outburst. "What?"

"Oh sorry Twilight. It's just that in my experience needing to 'talk' has never meant good news. As for my comment...long story (whenever I really want to swear, but can't for whatever reason; I just say 'words' instead). Don't worry about it, sooo....what is on your mind?"

Twilight seemed to accept it easily enough. "Well Coal...I've been thinking...about us...and our situation... (I was terrified) you...you're still getting over being hurt, and it probably isn't good for you to have to spend all day at the farm and then have to come all the way back here. So I was

talking with Applejack and we decided that if it is Ok with you...Applejack would see if maybe you could stay at the farm from now on. J-just so you wouldn't have to keep wasting your time going back and forth!"

Twilight gave me a sheepish smile upon finishing. I was a little taken back...I didn't want to leave. I liked spending time with Twilight. Besides...after what I overheard the other night...I was pretty scared to be around Applejack. Which sucks because back on Earth it was between her and Rainbow Dash for which one was my favorite pony. How does this pertain to anything here? I'll just say it: Applejack is freaking hot in my eyes, and I find myself thinking about her sexually every time we are together. It is very disrespectful I know, but I am a guy damnit and I have needs! Lame excuse, but come on...give me a break! Twilight is beautiful and all, but she isn't as attractive as Dash or Applejack to me. That applies to the others as well. I could never explain why that is, but when I'm around Dash or Applejack...all I can think about is knowing them intimately. I don't have that problem with any pony else. So I had several reasons to not like this idea, but I couldn't refuse. I knew something was up; beyond what Twilight was telling me. I wasn't going to make this hard on her though and of course (like I even need to say this), I wasn't mad at Twilight for it either.

"I see...well...as long as the Apples don't mind; I don't either." Twilight looked to be both relieved and a little sad that this was so easy for me. Noticing this I had to back peddle a bit. "Not that I'm in any hurry to leave here or anything. I was actually starting to think of this place as...home, but I completely understand that you have my best interest at heart. It really isn't a bad idea either. I will miss our breakfasts together though. Those have definitely been one of the nicest times of my days here."

Twilight gave me a big smile this time. She trotted over to me and gave me a gentle hug.

"Thank you Coal, they...I really enjoyed them too." Just then my stomach let out a loud rumble, Twilight giggled at the noise.

"I guess that means it is time for dinner. What would you like tonight Coal?"

I didn't even have to think about it. "I would like an apple or two please."

* * * *

After Coal had left, Applejack got busy thinking over the day. Twilight had dropped that bomb on every pony and now she needed to convince Big Mac to let Coal stay here. The nights aren't too cold in her opinion. The barn should be fine if he has a blanket...maybe two. She really just needed to come up with a way to bring it up and present it. In the middle of running the setup off to herself; Big Mac walked in looking very dirty and very tired.

"Howdy AJ...enjoy yer day off?"

"Ah sure did...uhh Big Mac? There...there is somethen Ah need ta' ask ya."

Big Mac grabbed an apple juice and took a seat at the table. "Alrighty AJ...what about Coal is it this time?"

Applejack went wide eyed and almost disbelievingly said: "Wha-why would ya think it had anythen ta' do with Coal?"

"Cause every time we have talked in the past several days it has been about him. Do Ah need ta' start guessen or are ya gonna tell me?"

Applejack shuffled her hooves nervously. "Well...the thing is...Twi' can't house Coal anymore. She uhh...please don't tell her Ah told ya this Big Mac! She kissed Coal in his sleep and now she doesn't think she can control herself around him no more if they're alone!"

Big Mac's eyed widened for a moment before returning to their normal passive nature. "Ah take it ya want him ta' stay here, but ya don't know iff'n Ah'm gonna be Ok with it. Ah'll tell ya now AJ...Ah...Ah don't see a problem with it."

Applejack stared dumbfounded at Big Mac. She couldn't comprehend the words just spoken. "Are-are ya being serious Big Mac?"

"Ah am. Ah ran inta' Coal this mornen. He is an awful nice feller. Ah trust him not to take advantage of ya, and iff'n something did happen between the both of ya...it would be consensual. Ah trust ya AJ...Ah know ya wouldn't do nothen ya weren't proud of."

"Tha-thank you... Big Mac. That means a lot ta' me. Ah'll let Coal know tomorra' mornen. Ah was thinken if ya weren't too keen on him stayen in the house; he could stay in the barn."

"Now don't ya'll start with that. Coal will stay in the guest room. Twilight doesn't have an extra bed after yer little tussle with Rarity that one night right? That means he has been sleepen on the floor every night he has been here. Excluding the time in the hospital ah course. It is about time the fella had a soft bed ta' sleep on."

Applejack grew a large smile and hugged her brother. "Thank ya Big Mac. Ah'm so glad yer starten ta' like Coal."

"Now don't ya be getting any weird ideas AJ. Ma' barn door swings the right way iff'n Ah need ta' remind ya."

Applejack and Big Mac shared a hearty laugh before Applejack started dinner and Big Mac went to shower off. It was going to be a peaceful night at the Apple household.

* * * *

Author's note: The next chapter is going to be a game changer! HOO-AH! It will also make up for this one being so short!

Chapter 21: Meeting Scootaloo (pain ensues)

Twilight and I had finished dinner several hours ago. She went to bed, but I was wide awake. I was thinking about my talk with Twilight. The thought of leaving my 'comfort zone' and living with Applejack just freaked me the hell out! Especially now that she knew I was taking peeks at her...them....WHATEVER! I am not going to apologize for that crap anymore! Do you people have any idea how frustrating it is to be attracted to creatures that don't wear clothes!? I may not be seeing anything fun, but what you don't see drives you crazier than what you do see! It is true! You see a picture of a naked chick and you're like 'that is awesome'. You see a picture of a chick almost naked and you're like 'Fuck! So close!'. That is basically the deal with me and all the other ponies. Anyway, I decided that I should probably get some air.

I left the library and made my way through the deserted streets of Ponyville. I kept walking and eventually found myself at the market place. The carts had all been closed up except...the apple cart. "Whaaa" was all I could say as I looked at it. "Geez...talk about being trusting of others. Oh well, whatever floats their boats I guess..."

I started to walk away, but stopped when I heard a thud behind me. I turned around to see a little hoof sticking out of a bush reaching for an apple. It wasn't all that dark, but I couldn't make out the color, yet somehow I could tell it was a hoof....I don't even know. I stood there staring at it until the whole pony fell forward. It was Scootaloo. She stood up shaking herself off and quickly jumped up grabbing an apple. She looked at it and let out a sigh. She started to walk away, but stopped when she saw me. Her eyes went huge and her legs began to shake. She started to breathe heavily and I could hear whimpers. I couldn't tell, but I think she started to cry. I didn't know if it was because she was scared, or because I had seen her steal an apple. I started walking towards her, and as soon as I started to move; she started to panic. She fell on her flank and curled up into a ball. She was shaking violently. She was sobbing and was murmuring to herself.

"Pleasedon'thurtme...pleasedon'thurtme...pleasedon'thurtme..." It was barely audible. The ground was getting wet where she was cowering from her tears. I looked at the sight with a feeling of guilt and sorrow that I had never known. I hadn't done anything. I was just standing there and it made this little filly tremble in terror. I guess the context of a first meeting sets the tone. Alone in the dead of night getting caught doing something bad must equal little filly panic mode.

I stood over her for a moment. I couldn't bring myself to speak for whatever reason. I think a part

of my brain was d'awwwwing at the sight; while another part of my brain was crying at it. I kneeled down and scooped her into my arms. She started to thrash around. She couldn't scream...she was simply sobbing too hard. She never came across this weak and vulnerable in the show, but I guess she always had Applebloom or Sweetie Belle to comfort her and give her strength. I forcefully made her stop thrashing by sitting down and resting her on my lap. I then leaned over her holding her tightly. I had her head right against my cheek. She was trembling all the more now. I finally got enough control over myself to start talking.

"Please...calm down. I'm not going to hurt you. I'm not mad at you for trying to take something. Please...just calm down."

Her trembling slowed and she pulled herself back in order to look at me. Her light purple eyes were filled with tears and her coat was matted down from crying. She looked like the sweetest, but most pathetic little filly you had ever seen. I did the only thing I could do. I leaned forward and kissed her forehead. I rubbed the back of her head gently and kept whispering to her. "It's going to be alright. I'm not going to hurt you."

After a few minutes she calmed down considerably. Having calmed down enough myself I could now hear that her stomach was rumbling. I picked up the apple she had taken and rubbed it off. I then looked at her and said: "Don't worry about this apple sweetheart. I work with the Apple family; I'll just have them take this one out of my pay. You need to eat something." She gave me a gentle nod and took the apple. She looked at it for a moment before biting into it.

She looked so sweet in my embrace slowly eating an apple. Her cheeks were protruding from the big bites she was taking. I had a feeling of peace...and fulfillment. I just wanted to take care of her and protect her from the world. After she finished the apple (eating the core and all...damn) she gave me a small smile. I rubbed the top of her head some more with a look of empathy. While I was rubbing her head she finally worked up the courage to talk.

"Th-thank you m-mister. I was very hungry. I'm sorry I was going to steal it; I...I didn't want to, but I had to."

I looked at her with a feeling of dread creep up on me. You see...Scootaloo is almost always depicted as an orphan in fan-fiction. I had even fantasized about adopting her at some point. I loved her that much. So here I am...in the middle of the night...with Scootaloo...stealing an apple...because she 'had to'...FUCK!

"Why is that sweetheart? Oh I'm sorry...I don't even know your name."

"My name is Scootaloo...what is your name?"

"It's Coal."

"Coal!?" Scootaloo gasped and put her hooves to her mouth. She was staring at me with what looked like shock.

"Applebloom told me about you...she said you were really nice. S-she was right." Scootaloo gave me a much bigger smile and dug her face into my chest nuzzling in. "...I don't have a home to go to...my mom got real mad at me...I broke some more stuff trying to get my cutie mark. She...she got tired of it. That is why I had to take the apple. I...I was so hungry. I thought I could maybe volunteer to help Applebloom with her chores to make up for it. Please don't be mad at me!"

Scootaloo was starting to cry again. She put her hooves around me and pushed her face into my chest harder still. I could feel her tears starting to soak into my clothes. I did the only thing I could; I held her. I pulled her up to my face and kissed her gently. I nuzzled her cheek and she in turn nuzzled mine. I leaned back to get a good look at her. She was so small. She looked so tired and sad. I knew I needed to get her home, but I didn't think Scootaloo would like it. I just had to do what I knew to be right.

"I could never be mad at you for anything Scootaloo. Spike has told me a fair amount about you and your friends. I know you're a very strong little filly. Seeing you like this...breaks my heart Scootaloo. We need to go talk to your mom. She has to be so worried about you. She loves you I'm sure. All moms love their children...and it is best for you."

Scootaloo looked away from me. She clearly was against the idea, but given the situation she couldn't really refuse. She nodded and told me where to go. She was only about five minutes away from home. It was actually kind of weird as I approached the door. The lights were off and there was a note on the door. As I read it...my heart broke and I was filled with an incredible anger.

'Scootaloo,

If you're reading this then I have gone to bed. Go stay with one of your friends tonight. The nights aren't too cold so don't you dare try to guilt me! Don't bother trying to get in. I have my ear plugs in and won't hear you. If you're going to apologize and promise to stop hanging around with those girls I'll forgive you and take you back. Don't bother coming home otherwise.'

The vein in my neck was about to explode! I had never been so pissed in my entire life, and it was at a pony! Scootaloo took the note from me in my rage. I was about to rip it from her hooves, but she jumped out of my arms and ran off with it. I quickly punched the door with all of my strength. There was a pleasant wham as I left an indent in the door. I put on a satisfied grin seeing the damage I had done, but no time to enjoy it. I gave chase after Scootaloo.

I managed to keep up with her all the way to the CMC clubhouse. I was much too big to enter, so I had to call to her.

"Scootaloo! Please come out from there! Please don't read the note Scootaloo! I'm begging you! Please just come out of there and let me help you!" I was out of breath from all the stress I was put under. I could feel intense pain all along my body because of my injury. I had definitely managed to fuck myself on this one. I was about to start calling to Scootaloo again, but she slowly trotted out of the clubhouse. Her head was hung low and she was crying again. The wind blew and the note was lazily carried away.

She collapsed onto the balcony and cried. She yelled out with her sweet voice asking 'why'. 'Why didn't any pony love her? Why didn't any pony care about her? Why did every pony leave her!?' Her cries turned into gasps as she started to choke on her own tears. I couldn't take it anymore. I got as close to her as I could and managed to get a hand around her. I pulled her down from the clubhouse and back into my embrace.

She beat my chest with her hooves and told me to let go. I was trying to comfort her, but seeing her like this made me break down. I couldn't be strong for her. I couldn't even be strong for myself. Tears started streaming down my face as I held her close. She stopped hitting me and we both just cried. We cried for what felt like hours. When the wind started to pick up more I had to make my way back to Twilight's. When we had gotten to the library I could already see signs of morning. I knew today was not going to be a fun day.

Scootaloo had finally fallen asleep in my arms. I walked into the library and silently made my way to my usual spot. This time however; I didn't lay down. I took a seat and leaned back against a bookcase. I saw my clothes had been set downstairs, so I grabbed the shirt I came here in and put it over Scootaloo. I held her so firmly. I could feel her little chest still heaving slightly as she gently sobbed in her sleep. I kissed her one last time; after which I quickly fell asleep. My last thought was: 'What will Scootaloo do now? How can I help some pony when I can't even help myself.'

* * * *

Twilight awoke from a long night. The sun was peaking in through her window and she could hear the birds waking up. Their chirping started to fill the air in a seemingly unorganized fashion. Twilight climbed out of her bed begrudgingly. She made her way downstairs only to see Coal with one of his shirts draped over him.

He had slid off the bookcase in his sleep and was now on his side. She could see a little bit of what looked like purple sticking out from under his chin. Her curiosity got the better of her. She levitated the shirt off of him slowly, and immediately lost concentration dropping it onto the floor. There snuggled up into him was the pony she recognized as Scootaloo. Her mind immediately shut down and she didn't know what to think, but thankfully Coal woke up after his secondary source for warmth was removed.

"Hmmm?" Coal slowly opened his eyes, but didn't get up. He could feel Scootaloo still clinging

to him. He remember what had happened and let out a contented sigh. "Oh Scootaloo...you poor sweetheart. How hard has your life been?" Coal asked not realizing Twilight was standing there staring at him dumbfounded.

"Coal..." Coal's eyes snapped open and he turned his head a little so he could see Twilight. "Wh-why is Scootaloo sleeping with you?"

"Don't get any funny ideas Twilight...what am I saying? I'm not on Earth anymore...I need to remember ponies are a lot more innocent. Ok Twilight, here is the deal..."

Coal went over everything that had happened last night with Twilight listening intently. In the middle of the story Twilight figured out what must of happened even before Coal finished. Her fear and concern was replaced by sadness and some pride directed at Coal for taking care of the little filly.

"After that I fell asleep on the bookcase. *sigh* What can I do about Scootaloo though? This child doesn't have a home to return to anymore. I doubt she would honestly give up Sweetie Belle or Applebloom. I-I wish I hadn't gotten hurt now. If I hadn't...I may of saved up enough to get a down payment on a house. I could take care of Scootaloo. But...but I can't right now. Just thinking about her being alone in the cold; hungry and tired...it just makes me sick."

Coal had been trying his hardest to keep his voice down, so that Scootaloo wouldn't wake up. She however had been awake as soon as Twilight took off the shirt. She was too comfortable and too scared to let go of Coal. It was difficult, but she managed to pull off the sleeping act very well.

"Coal...even if you did have a place of your own. I don't think it would be best for you to take care of Scootaloo. She needs a parent...not a friend. You're a wonderful friend Coal, but I don't think you are ready to be a parent yet."

Coal looked up at Twilight with a look of anger she had never seen him direct at any pony other than himself. She immediately regretted saying that and started to worry that she royally screwed up.

"Twilight."

"Y-y-yes Coal?"

"*sigh* You're probably right, but I would never accept that as an excuse." Twilight wasn't sure what to say in response. She just continued to look into Coal's eyes. "I may not be parent material right now, but that is only because there has never been a life that needed me. If it was for any pony...I would gladly make myself worthy of any title. That includes a father. Scootaloo...she...if it was for her...I would make myself into the best father Equestria had ever

seen. This...poor, sweet, dear child...she deserves so much, but gets so little." Coal leaned forward and kissed the top of Scootaloo's head.

Scootaloo couldn't help herself, and found that she pulled into Coal more. She loved his words and she loved his warmth. He was so kind to her and she loved him for it. "But...I guess it doesn't matter what I WOULD do...the simple and honest truth is that I can't. If I thought it would help I would talk with that...THING that has been posing as Scootaloo's mother and try to sort things out, but I doubt that IT would care." Twilight was relieved that his anger wasn't directed at her, but the venom seeping from his words was still more than enough for her to doubt herself.

"C-coal...y-you shouldn't talk like that." Coal gave her a look of righteous fury. Twilight gulped as she continued. "I...I know that the pony taking care of Scootaloo isn't her real mother. Every pony knows that...Ponyville isn't that big after all. We all care bout Scootaloo, but her surrogate mother was the only one willing to take her in when Scootaloo found her way here. She was never willing to talk about what happened before, but after making friends with Sweetie Belle and Applebloom...I for one didn't think it mattered. Scootaloo seemed happy and I was happy for her, but Coal...if you knew how much trouble and damage Scootaloo and her friends have caused....I don't think you would be so quick to pass judgment on her mother."

Scootaloo almost let out a whimper as she feared the direction this conversation was going. She couldn't say anything because if she did; they would know she had been listening in this entire time. She didn't want Coal to stop liking her...she needed him. Needed him more than anything else right now.

"Honestly Twilight...I don't give a flying fuck about how much damage they have done." Twilight jumped back at the end of that sentence. Coal was drilling daggers through her that sent chills down her spine. He had never sworn like that in-front of another pony and she was absolutely terrified. Scootaloo on the other hand couldn't see the face Coal was wearing, but she was a little frightened by his choice of words and the anger she was picking up from his tone.

"Last night I saw the emotional break down of an innocent child who only wants to be loved, but deserves a hundred times more than that. You are a very smart girl Twilight and I appreciate your input in this, but you need to understand that it doesn't matter worth shit how much these girls have done. I would gladly bet my life and soul on that none of it was intentional damage. They are children who are left to run around on their own to do what they please. Of course a small child is going to get in trouble without supervision, but no pony is capable of watching after them. Applejack and Big Mac have the farm to worry about, so they can't watch after Applebloom. Rarity has her own business to run and can't look after Sweetie Belle twenty-four seven. Scootaloo's...mother...I don't know what she does, but if she could give up Scootaloo so easily...I doubt she has spent much time with her. If she had; she wouldn't be so quick to treat Scootaloo this way. Scootaloo is such a sweet filly. I don't care if I just met her last night, I don't care if I'm human and she isn't. I don't care if she causes problems, or breaks things. I do care, but I don't care in a way that would ever make me hate her. I...I love Scootaloo like a father

already. I would die for any pony, but I would live and suffer for Scootaloo!"

Twilight was trembling. Coal's words were filled with so much power; so much emotion; she was trembling at how weak it made her feel. Scootaloo wasn't fairing much better. She was forcing her eyes closed to try and prevent tears. Being caught now made her think Coal would change his mind about her. Listening in the way she had felt wrong, but she couldn't help it.

Twilight finally calmed down enough to try and talk some more. "C-c-c-coal...I-I-I...I don't know what to say. I understand what you're saying, but..."

Coal interrupted her: "But nothing!" Twilight jumped. "There is no changing my mind on this matter Twilight. I'm going down to Sweet Apple Acres today. I'm going to work until five and then I'm going to go look for a second job. I don't care if the Apples will house me now. I'll be out of your mane today. I'll sleep under the stars if I have to. I'm going to work my ass off and save up money for a house. I am going to buy said house and if Scootaloo still doesn't have anywhere to live at that point; I'll invite her to stay with me."

Scootaloo couldn't take it anymore. She started sobbing. She didn't dare look up at Coal who now realized that she must of been awake for God knows how much of this talk. She sobbed and wheezed and sniffled into Coal. She was so scared; she was so happy; she had never felt so loved before. No pony had ever gone so far her. Even if Coal hadn't done it yet; the fact that he even considered doing all that...was more than enough. The tears were coming out harder and faster than ever before. She held Coal as tightly as her little hooves would allow her. She almost yelped when Coal put his hands on her and slowly lifted himself (and her with him) off the floor. When they were sitting upright Coal began kissing Scootaloo comfortingly again. He rubbed the back of her head and her back gently. He nuzzled her with his cheek. She didn't want this moment to end. She felt so safe and loved.

"Scootaloo..." at the sound of Coal's voice she cringed. "Look at me Scootaloo." she let out a few more sobs before pulling herself back. Coal was looking at her with such a kind expression. She wiped the tears out of her eyes with her hooves still hiccupping from her crying. "What do you think about all this Scootaloo? I was just talking about what I want, but what do you want Scootaloo? Do you want to go back to...your mother? I couldn't be the one to take care of you properly for a long while still. I was serious when I said I would do anything for you though Scootaloo. I just want you to have the happiness and security you deserve. I...I love you Scootaloo. You make me want to be a better man. I want to be that better man for you. Is that what you want?"

Scootaloo was about to start crying all over again, but managed to calm herself. She bit her lip and let out small whines. "I...I don't want to go back to that pony. She isn't my mom...she only took care of me because the Mayor said it would count as community service. That pony has done a lot of bad things...she has a lot to make up for. She never once told me that she loved me..." Coal sat there intently staring at Scootaloo. She couldn't look back at him though...she

feared that it would make her cry some more.

Twilight had been completely forgotten about. She was no longer needed or wanted in this situation. She snuck away deciding breakfast would probably be requested soon.

"C-coal...I...I love you too!" Scootaloo buried her face back into Coal's chest again. She had to tilt her head so that her words wouldn't be muffled. "No pony has ever said such nice things to me before! No pony has ever been willing to do so much for me! I love you Coal! I know you can't take care of me, but...please don't leave me! I don't have any pony else that I can rely on. I have Sweetie Belle and Applebloom, but they don't make me feel safe like you do! Please...please don't leave me..."

Scootaloo calmed down after spending so much energy pleading with Coal. She desperately wanted nothing more than for this moment to live on forever, but it couldn't. After all...Coal had a lot of work to do now.

* * * *

Authors notes: To better understand my character's motivation when it came to Scootaloo; ya'll should take a few minutes and read: '[I couldn't wake you, because you can never wake up again...](#)' by [AmberWings](#). It made me cry very VERY manly tears! On a slightly related note I would like to give a shout out to '[k12314](#)' author of '[How Did I Get Here?](#)'. (awesome story btw) I not too long ago found out that he had the same idea with Scootaloo. I read the comments on that particular chapter and found out that there were others before him that had done it too. DRAT! I THOUGHT THIS WOULD BE MY THING! Oh well...who can blame us really? Scootaloo is definitely 'Cutealoo'

Chapter 22: Being Responsible

I felt so at peace. Scootaloo had told me she loved me...that she needed me. I...felt amazing. I felt like I could do anything. There had been some pain in my chest remaining from last night, but after Scootaloo's words...I couldn't bring myself to give a shit about it.

"Scootaloo." She looked up at me with that adorable big eyed stare of hers. "It is going to take some time before I can take care of you properly. Is there anywhere you can stay until then?" She looked away in contemplation.

"I could stay in the school building after hours...I don't think Cherilee would mind."

I shook my head. "That isn't what I mean Scootaloo. I won't have you living by yourself. I have an idea..." I was about to ask Twilight a question when I realized that she wasn't there anymore.

I set Scootaloo down and stood up. "Twilight? Are you still here?" I heard her voice from the kitchen.

"Yes Coal...I was making breakfast. It's ready if you two are hungry..." There was a lot of pain in her voice. I knew that I would have to apologize for the way I talked to her later, but for now the only thing on my mind was Scootaloo.

Scootaloo and I joined Twilight in the kitchen for a simple breakfast of wheat pancakes for the ladies and a couple of mangos for me (are those even in season?). After we had eaten our fill I took care of the dishes. Twilight wanted to be the one to do it, but I just told her that it was the least I could do. Scootaloo and Twilight sat down at the kitchen table in silence. I could feel their eyes peering into me up until I finished.

"Twilight."

"Yes Coal?"

"...is there an inn in Ponyville?"

"Yes there is. It is just outside the market district."

"Do you know how much it is a night for one?"

"I'm afraid I don't. I've never had to stay there. What are you planning?"

"If I can afford it...I want to buy a room for Scootaloo until I have a place of my own." I heard Scootaloo gasp.

"C-coal...you don't have to do that. I'll be fine at the school building, really!"

"I won't hear any of it Scootaloo! As long as I am breathing I am going to make sure you have as easy a life as possible. Besides...ponies mature a lot faster than people do. You wouldn't need me to take care of you after a few years. How old are you Scootaloo?"

"I'll be eight in a few months."

"So you are basically almost five years away from being a young adult. That is nothing compared to what it would take if you were human. It would literally take twice as long for you to be an adult. It is honestly no problem at all for me to at the very least buy you a room Scootaloo. I won't hear another word against it. I'm going down there now to get a quote. I'll be heading to work after that." I walked over to the table and kissed Scootaloo's forehead. "I want you to stop by the farm at five today Scootaloo. I'll know by then if I have gotten your living arrangements set up." Scootaloo gave me a smile and nodded.

I turned my attention to Twilight. "Twilight...thank you so much for letting me stay here for as long as you did. I'm sorry for the way I spoke earlier. I'm not mad at you in the slightest; I know you only had Scootaloo's and my best interest at heart. Trust me when I say that I can handle this Twilight." I gave Twilight a small hug. "You are a wonderful friend Twilight. I hope I'll see you around."

Twilight looked away from me hiding her face. She didn't respond...I was a little hurt, but I understood. I said my goodbyes and made my way to the market district. I would get directions if I couldn't find the inn once there.

After walking for about fifteen minutes I made it to the district. It was alive with the hustle and bustle of ponies going about their business. Thankfully after the Pinkie party none of the ponies stared anymore. I got several waves and smiles, but no looks of distrust. I relished this moment of peace. I got directions from the pony I recognized as Roseluck. The Cream colored pony with a red mane and rose cutie mark. If I wasn't on a mission of the utmost importance I may have chatted her up a bit. What? She is pretty damn attractive. Don't give me that look! I'm prioritizing aren't I? I thanked her and found my way to the inn.

It was a simple wooden building with a sign out front that depicted a pony in a nightcap sleeping in a bed with Z's floating off. If I had only seen that then I wouldn't of needed to bother Rose, but whatever. I walked inside having to duck a little to make it under the doorway. Thankfully the roof was a little higher so I didn't have to keep crouching. The clerk behind the counter was an older mare. She had a light brown coat with a much paler brown mane. Think of Hoops, but lighten the coat and mane a little...and is an older mare...don't think of Hoops; that was a dumb idea. I couldn't see her cutie mark though. I walk up to her and she went bug eyed seeing me (I guess I spoke too soon when I said I wasn't getting stares).

"Hey there! I'm Coal! It's a pleasure to meet you." I offered her a hand/hoof shake which she accepted.

She had calmed down after the initial shock and responded "I'm Coco Bean. It is very nice to meet you too! What do I owe this visit? Are you needing a room for the night dearie? I thought you were staying with Twilight."

"Word travels around quickly I take it. The situation is complicated to be honest. I do need a room, but it would basically be indefinitely and it technically wouldn't be me living in it. I would just be paying for it. I just need to know how much it is a night. If I can afford it; I'll be back tonight with the filly that will be staying here."

"I see. Well dear we have a room open that runs twenty-five bits a night. That would include breakfast as well. We don't serve lunch or dinner I'm afraid. If this filly of yours will be staying here for several months though; I can give you the 'returning guest' discount after having stayed

here one week. That will bring the cost down to twenty bits. Is that doable dear?"

"That sounds absolutely perfect Ms. Coco! Thank you very much."

"Oh please dear, Coco is fine. I'm curious though; who is this filly that will be staying here?"

"She is...well...I'm basically her non official guardian. Do you know who the Cutie Mark Crusaders are?"

"Yes I do. Those little fillies have all sorts of fun through town trying to find their cutie marks. I know a lot of the younger ponies don't take too kindly to their antics, but I find them adorable. Is something the matter with one of them? It...it's Scootaloo isn't it?"

"Yes...it is."

"Say no more sweetheart. I think I know what the situation is. And thank you so much for doing this for her! She is such a kind filly. I bet you have made her feel very loved."

"Thank you Coco. I hope I have; she deserves it."

I worked up a deal with Coco where I would pay her at the end of each week when I received my pay. I didn't have anything for collateral, but she was nice enough to trust me. Now I just need to make sure nothing happens at the farm. I was already an hour later than what I normally was, and I still had to make it clear across town! I decided sprinting was a good choice, but my feet sure didn't like the idea. Boots made with kicking tree trunks in mind...don't make good running shoes.

It took me about twenty minutes running to make it to the farm house. I didn't see any of the Apple family though. There was a note on the table I usually work at. It scared me at first; like I had already been let go or something. It just said that they had to all leave for the day to take care of some business with their cousins in Appleloosa. It also said that there was a guest bed made up for me on the second floor. I was pretty happy to finally have a bed to sleep on! The floor is not meant for sleeping darn it! Anyway...they had already taken care of the hard chores, and hoped that I would give the paperwork a rest today and do some of the less than difficult stuff. I wasn't in any position to refuse of course and quickly got to work.

Without any pony to talk to the work gone done quickly. I had to clean the gutters, sort some more apples. Feed the pigs and sheep. I had to water the vegetables in the back; you know. Just normal farm stuff. I grabbed a couple of apples for lunch today (I hoped they wouldn't mind) and then got back to work. It took me up until 4:00 pm. to finish everything. I figured I may as well get back to the paperwork for another hour. One hour wasn't enough time to really accomplish anything though. I just kinda ended up sitting around twiddling my thumbs waiting on Scootaloo. I decided it was best not to waste their money, so I wrote down on the back of the

note they wrote for me my working hours. With a little explanation as to why I was both late and 'leaving' a little early. I was sure hoping they would understand.

At almost 5:00 pm. sharp I heard a knock on the door. It was Scootaloo. She had a timid smile on her face and was shuffling her hooves looking up at me.

"Hi Coal...how was your day?"

"It went very well Scootaloo. I have some good news for you too." Scootaloo's eyes started to light up. "I went to the inn and got you all set up. Coco; the inn's manager, has agreed to let me pay for your room. You get to spend your first night there tonight."

Scootaloo grew a huge smile and started jumping around me flapping her little wings (they made a cute buzzing sound by the way). "Thank you thank you thank you thank you thank you...." She went on and on with her thanks. I had to pick her up and hug on her to get the thanks to stop. She gave my face a big hug and kissed my cheek (SO MUCH D'AWWWWW).

"Thank you so much Coal! You are the best!"

We shared a good long hugging session before making our way to the inn. When we arrived I introduced Scootaloo to Coco and she showed us to Scootaloo's new room. It had a single bed, a dresser, a desk, a bathroom, and a couple of cabinets. Scootaloo and I thanked Coco who then left to give us time to get settled.

"This is so amazing Coal! I can't believe I have my own room!" Scootaloo was bouncing gently on her new bed. I just laughed and looked at her. The smile on her face made any and all work it was going to take to keep this up worth it a million times over.

"Hey Scootaloo..." she stopped bouncing and gave me her full attention.

"Yes Coal?"

"This place will serve you breakfast in the morning, but other than that you will have to take care of yourself I'm afraid. You will need to get up on time to get said breakfast and make it to school. I'll be giving you an allowance that I hope you will spend on lunch and dinner. I'll try to pack you a lunch most days, but I'm about to start looking for a second job. I won't have a lot of free time anymore. I hope I can trust you to take care of yourself Scootaloo. God knows I wish I could be here to do it for you, but I can't. Will you be alright Scootaloo?"

She jumped off the bed and walked up to me. She lifted her front hooves up and put them on my legs. Like how a dog would when it wants your affection. I quickly took the hint and picked her up. She started nuzzling me and hugging me. It felt so nice to be loved like that. In-between our hugs she started talking.

"You can count on me Coal. I won't let your kindness go to waste, but you don't need to give me any money Coal. I'm sure I can find a job or something to make some lunch money."

"No you won't Scootaloo. You are far too young for that. I want you to have the childhood you deserve, but this is the best I can do for now. I want you to know every morning when you wake up; that even though I'm not here...you are well taken care of. I want you to spend time with your friends and make plenty of wonderful memories. We only get one childhood, I've had mine; and now I want to give you yours."

Scootaloo started to tear up again, but thankfully not from sadness. She had the biggest smile I had ever seen. It was so warm and made me feel like I mattered. She held me close and quickly fell asleep in my arms. I was a little surprised at first, but I chalked it up to a long day for her. I tucked her into bed and left a note on her desk. 'I love you Scootaloo' and quietly left. I informed Coco of my deal with Scootaloo. She made me feel so much better when she told me that she wouldn't mind waking Scootaloo up at a decent hour on school days, and saving her some breakfast if she ended up sleeping in on weekends. Coco is such a blessing in my life right now...I can't even begin to describe. I thanked her sincerely and went about my way in search of another job.

* * * *

Author's notes: I'll say this now, there will be plenty of OC characters. They won't be the main focus for any extended period of time, but I do need them in order to accomplish what I set out to do when starting this story. If you've forgotten: My goal is to make a prolonged story that can remain interesting and seem real. Also...I'm very very very VERY sorry for the next chapter. I'm glad that I added that 'Dark' tag...

Chapter 23: Old Wounds

Twilight was pacing back and forth in the library. She just couldn't convince herself that everything was Ok. She and the others have seen what Coal is like at his worst. She was worried that if life got too hard on Coal; he would snap and take it out on Scootaloo. She had to stop and just contemplate on that. Coal came across very sincere with her about taking care of Scootaloo. Maybe he would do a good job she hoped.

"I hope Coal knows what he is getting into..." Twilight's train of thought was interrupted by a blue blur busting in through the front door; making Twilight yelp in surprise, and fall over.

"Sup Twilight! Oops...sorry to scare you." Dash helped Twilight up with an apologetic smile and chuckle.

"Hey Rainbow. What has you in such a hurry?"

Dash blinked a couple times "...oh yeah! Is Coal here? I was actually hoping I could talk with you in private."

"No Coal has already left for work. What is up?"

"Well...you know how Scootaloo is living with that old bat of a mare right?"

"Y-yes...I know" Twilight was nervous at the mention of the filly's name.

"Well get this; she kicked Scootaloo out last night! She showed up for work today going on and on about how tired she was of her. She left a note for Scootaloo last night that wasn't there in the morning. She apparently told Scoots that if she wanted a home to return to; she would have to stop being friends with Sweetie Belle and Applebloom! Can you believe that!?"

"That...that is awful Rainbow, but...why are you telling me this?"

"I was hoping you had a spell that would teach that awful pony a lesson! How dare she do that to just a little filly!"

"Rainbow I can't do that. It would be wrong; even if she does deserve it."

Dash sighed and sat on her haunches. "Horse apples...What should I do Twilight? I want to help Scootaloo, but I don't think I could raise a filly. I...I'm just too selfish for it."

Twilight sighed and put her hoof on Dash's shoulder. "Don't worry about it Rainbow...she is in good...hands."

Dash looked up at Twilight. She was very confused. "What do you mean Twilight? Do you know what is happening with Scootaloo?"

"Yes...yes I do Rainbow. Coal...Coal is basically adopting her. Nothing official, but he is going to try and get her a room at the inn in town. He then hopes to save up enough to buy a house that they can share."

Dash's eyes went as big as saucers and she jumped back. "Are you serious!? Coal!? When did he ever meet her!?"

"Calm down Rainbow...I'll tell you all about it."

Twilight then told Dash about that morning and everything Coal had said and done. By the end of it Dash couldn't even look at Twilight. She was too busy thinking about how unbelievable it

sounded. "And that is all that happened. Coal really cares about Scootaloo, and is going to do his best to take care of her."

"That...that is good news...I think. I'm worried Twilight. Coal...Coal has a lot of problems you know? Can...can he handle raising a filly?"

"I don't know Rainbow; we'll just have to keep an eye on them I guess."

"We?"

"Yes...I can keep an eye on Coal if you'll keep an eye on Scootaloo. She really looks up to you. I'm sure she would tell you if something had happened."

"I see...alright Twilight. That sounds like a good idea. I hope we're just overreacting though. I was kinda looking forward to hanging out with Coal sometime. I don't want to find out that he is a...filly-fooler or anything..."

"I understand Rainbow, but if it makes you feel any better...I don't think he is. I think he just gets really passionate about ponies he likes."

"You're probably right Twilight. I'm glad I stopped by...thanks." With that Dash took off out the library; leaving a tired and worried Twilight behind.

* * * *

"What can I do...hmmm..." I was walking around Ponyville enjoying the weather; just trying to come up with something I could do as a second job. I really needed the bits, and I couldn't just work double shifts or so at the farm. They have a lot of work they need doing, but they don't need me that much. I would just be hurting them in the long run.

I made my way past Rarity's Boutique when I heard some yelling. It was faint, but in the peace of the town I could just barely hear it. I opened the front door and looked around. The boutique looked like there had been a fight. There wasn't a lot of stuff everywhere, but there were definitely signs of a struggle. I could hear the yelling coming from up the stairs. I slowly made my way up them and noticed that a bedroom light was on. All the other lights were off, and I could see shadows moving past the light. I crept up on the door and what I saw horrified me.

The large grey stallion that I recognized as Rarity's ex-colt friend was there with Rarity bound and gagged. She had a look of hate and anger on her face, but more of fear and worry. She had been crying. I could tell because of all the makeup that had dripped from her eyes and stained the gag. He was pacing back and forth yelling at her. It wasn't screaming yelling; it was more of a monotone. That is probably why it was so quiet from outside.

"I give you everything! I give you my time, my attention, my love; everything! And what do you do!? You kick me out because I couldn't stand that stupid little dragon friend of yours! Do you want him to please you instead of me dear Rarity!? You never did let me have what I wanted you filthy skank! I really did love you! But you clearly never loved me! I think I'll be taking back my love from you now! You owe me and have no reason to complain! Just lay there and enjoy it! I know I will!"

He pushed Rarity over and pulled her flank over the edge of the bed. He started to position himself behind her, and I could hear her starting to sob.

I lost it. With everything that had happened...I finally snapped. I quietly walked behind him and I stood over him. I cast a shadow that engulfed his entire form.

"What the buck is making that sha..." He turned around and saw me. I never even gave him a chance. I immediately grabbed him by the throat and forced him to the ground. I jumped on top of him and started pounding into his face. I beat him until his face wasn't even recognizable anymore. He couldn't even resist. I didn't leave him any room to. He started to choke on his own blood and as badly as I wanted to kill him...I couldn't. I got up off of him and delivered a kick to his side effectively rolling him over. He started to cough up blood. His eyes were forced shut from the swelling.

I looked to Rarity who had a look of both relief and fear. She was looking at me like I was the bad guy...and that pissed me off. I didn't let her know that she had bothered me. Realizing that this FUCKER may have cost me my job and ruined what I had promised for Scootaloo...I found a new hate and energy in myself. I walked over to his convulsing body. He was trying to yell out for help, but I wasn't having any of it! I picked him up by the back of his head and with my other arm I delivered decisive blows to his chest. He coughed up blood after each blow, but I didn't care. I was seriously starting to enjoy it too. I wanted this fucker to pay for what he was about to do. I wanted him to suffer for potentially ruining me for Rarity. Once his breathing started to soften I stopped beating him. I dropped him to the floor with a soft thud. He was still very much alive...much to my disappointment. His body was twitching and his nose was leaking blood all over the floor.

I turned my attention back to Rarity. This entire time I had not said a single word. I had just walked up behind him and effectively removed him from the situation. My wounds were burning fiercely now. From all that running and stress with Scootaloo, and now this. I could feel that my skin had split open again and my bandages were soaking in blood. I did my best to ignore it, but I ended up clutching my chest as my heart started to pound furiously. There wasn't time to worry about it though. It was time for some damage control with Rarity. I started by removing the ties around her body. The gag was last because I was worried she might scream. What she did end up doing though...completely caught me off guard. She jumped up putting her hooves around my neck and kissed me. It wasn't a sexual kiss; it was a thank-you kind of kiss. It only lasted for a moment, but it left me completely dazed. That...or maybe it was from the blood loss...ehh

whatever I guess.

"Thank you so much Coal! If you hadn't shown up; that brute would of had his way with me! Thank you thank you thank you Coal!"

I was pretty confused at this point. "He is the brute? Rarity...I'll be honest...I was expecting you to hate me after beating him the way I did. Don't get me wrong; I'm not sorry for it. He got less than what he deserves, but I didn't think you would approve."

"I can't say I'm happy for the mess you've made Coal, but you did it to save me! I can't be mad at you for that!"

"Th-thank you Rarity." When I knew that Rarity wasn't going to hate me; I let up the tension in my body. That...was a very bad idea. With the adrenaline gone the pain from my wounds caused me to seize up and fall over. I was clutching my chest gasping for air. It felt like a million tiny hooks had been dug into my skin and were being pulled away. Rarity started to panic and removed my shirt to see what was happening. The bandages had absorbed all the blood they could, and now it was starting to leak out from around them. I didn't even know that a person could leak so much blood and not die! Maybe these bandages can't hold as much I don't know! All I know is that I'm in a huge amount of pain, and Rarity's screaming isn't helping! Did I mention she was screaming now? Cause she is...and it hurts! The last thing I saw was Rarity running out of the room and the grey stallion passed out about five feet away.

Chapter 24: Dark Secrets

I awoke in the same bed I had been in just a few days earlier. My vision was pretty blurry and I started to worry I had an ulcer or something...I'm not a doctor. I tried to sit up, but found that I literally didn't have any strength in my body. I must have been on some serious meds or what have you. That or I was strapped down...I really hope not.

After laying there for several minutes; my vision started to clear. I managed to turn my head to get a look around the room...there was no pony. I was alone *sigh*...bored now. I figured if I couldn't move and was alone...may as well sing! That probably sounds pretty random and pretty stupid, but it's what I do to pass the time occasionally. I'm not a good singer, but I enjoy it. I couldn't think of anything for several minutes though, so I ended up deciding to just hum the tune to some MLP songs. I didn't dare sing them properly. I'm in a hospital...if they are watching me...I could seriously eff myself! I hummed the tune to the theme, giggle at the ghostly, art of the dress, winter wrap up, you name it I had time to hum it. I went through every song...TWICE! Before some pony finally came in to check on me. It was the pony I recognized as Nurse Tenderheart.

"Hey there...it isn't Nurse Redheart this time? Not that I'm complaining of course."

"Oh you're awake! No not this time dear. I'm Nurse Tenderheart. I would say it is nice to meet you, but I sure would of preferred it under different circumstances."

"Yeah...me too. What happened anyway? The last thing I remember is passing out at Rarity's..."

"She ran to the hospital and made us come pick you up in a hurry. I've known Rarity for a while, but I have never seen her demand obedience so adamantly."

I laughed "That is pretty funny. So...what happened to the grey stallion?" I wasn't concerned for him in the least, but I was curious.

"Oh yes...Earl Grey...he is...alright."

"Doctor patient confidentiality?"

"No no...he is in the criminal ward. We don't have to be confidential with patients like that; well...we do, but no pony enforces it. The uppers feel they don't deserve it."

"I understand if you still don't want to tell me. Just...I didn't kill him did I?"

"YOU DID ALL THAT!?" She looked at me with a mixture of admiration and shock...I think.

"Ooooh...Rarity didn't tell you what happened?"

"She told the authorities, but we nurses don't hear much."

"I see, but yes...I did that. Whatever that is..."

"Well to answer your question; he isn't dead. He has massive bruising all over his body, and his nose is broken in six places. He is probably going to need surgery if he wants to keep his eyesight. Other than that...he is...fine."

I scoffed a little at her remark. "Sounds like it to me. I take it there is going to be a report about me now huh?"

"Well dear...maybe. I'm not too knowledgeable at how the authorities handle this sort of thing. I can guess that you probably did all that protecting Rarity, right?"

"Yes I did. I have been overexerting myself the last couple of days because of this stupid wound. I passed out shortly after I untied Rarity (shouldn't ah said that Coal)."

"She was tied up!?" I put on my serious face and just shut the hell up! "Eheheh...I won't pry dear; don't worry about it any. Your friends were here a little bit ago. I think they all left...Ooooh,

but your daughter is still here!"

I looked at her confused. "My what!? I don't have a.....OH! MY! GOD! Scootaloo...."

"What is the matter dear?" She was taken back by my outburst.

"Scootaloo isn't my daughter, but I was supposed to be taking care of her...please tell me I wasn't out for three damn days this time!"

She gave me a comforting look. "No Coal...you were only out for one night. It is morning now. Scootaloo came by with the others about an hour ago."

"Oh thank God! If she is still out there...would you mind letting her know that I'm Ok...and that she has school today. So please don't skip out on my expense; I'll be fine."

Nurse Tenderheart laughed a little, but complied. I could hear Scootaloo talking now. I couldn't make out what she was saying, but when the voices stopped and only Nurse Tenderheart came back in; I assumed that Scootaloo listened.

"She said that she'll go to school, but that she is coming back once the day is over."

I gave her a smile. "Thank you Nurse Tenderheart. I appreciate all of this, but I do have one question."

"Yes?"

"Why can't I feel anything?"

"Oh...hehehe...well dear; you are on some pretty strong pain medication. According to your chart...your previous injury burst open again and there was a chance for infection. They had to sew the wound shut this time. Since that would hurt more than I would ever want to know; they put you on some maximum strength pain medication based on your weight. You're pretty light for such a big thing" (Coal is 6 ft 3' 150 lb)

I burst out laughing at her joke! "I haven't heard that in a long time! That was funny!" I beamed at her after my laugh attack subsided.

"I'm glad you enjoyed that Coal! Well dear, as much as I would love to stay and chat; I do have other patients. Just press the button on the side of your bed if you need anything, and don't worry...the pain medication was given to you last night. They will be starting to weaken in a couple of hours. I hope you can hold tight until then."

I thanked her and she went about her business. With nothing else to do for I didn't know how

long; I decided to try and get some sleep. It isn't like I haven't been getting enough sleep lately right?

* * * *

Twilight, Fluttershy, Rainbow Dash, and Rarity were sitting in the library talking about the latest event with Coal (Pinkie had work and Applejack was just getting back from Appleloosa). Rarity was just about finished telling them what had happened.

"After that Coal came in and beat the creep right out of that foal! He was terrifying, but I was just so happy to be saved that I didn't care."

"Did any of you get a look at that stallion? Coal beat the pony feathers off of him!" Dash said with some pride in her voice. "I had no idea Coal could be such a bad-flank! It is probably a good thing he was still hurt. If he wasn't...he probably would of killed him!"

"Oh my goodness, please don't say that Dash! I would be so scared of Coal if he killed some pony." Fluttershy was trying very hard not to be scared of Coal as it is, and this latest incident wasn't helping.

"Twilight darling? You have been awful quiet. What are your thoughts?"

Twilight just shook her head. "I don't know what to think Rarity. It seems we can't go but a day without incident involving Coal around here. I'm more concerned with Scootaloo honestly. Rainbow knows, but did you girls know that he has basically adopted her?"

"Oh my goodness, no I didn't! Oops...I didn't mean to yell like that. So that is why she wanted to go with us to the hospital. I had no idea they were that close." Fluttershy was rubbing her cheek in contemplation.

"Me either darling! My what a man he is! He adopts a filly in need and saves me from a rapist! I think I need to ask him out sometime..." The others just glared at her. "What?"

"Rarity...you aren't put off of relationships...even for a little while; after what happened?" Twilight was giving her a rather perturbed face.

"Well Twilight...I don't see why I should wait; if it is something I may want."

"Yeah I get you there, but have you considered the fact that if you were to date Coal...you would basically be Scootaloo's mother figure? You already take care of Sweetie Belle as it is! And believe me! Scootaloo can be a hoof and a wing-full!" Dash was being surprisingly defensive about the concept of their relationship.

"That is a good point Rainbow Dash...I will have to give it some more thought."

"I think you're both right." Fluttershy had grabbed hold of all the attention in the room. "Oh I mean if you don't mind my saying. I think when he isn't being mean to himself he is very nice and friendly, but he now has a big responsibility with Scootaloo. But just because Coal has taken on that responsibility...it doesn't mean you have to as well. Coal is...very dependable. He always seems to be at just the right place at just the right time. I don't know if I should call him lucky though..." Fluttershy stopped talking when she looked up at her friend's wide-eyed faces. "Wh-what? Did I say something bad? I'm sorry..."

"Fluttershy...I...do...do you like Coal that way? It sounds like you have given this some thought..." Dash asked with a bit of concern in her voice.

"What!? N-no no I...*meep*...um well the thing is...*whimper*...maybe a litte."

"What?...WHAT!?" Twilight was screaming so loudly her voice cracked. Fluttershy just curled up and whimpered. "Are all you ponies crazy!? He is one; a completely different species, two; he is from a completely different world, three; he has proven himself to be emotionally unstable and prone to quick decisions, and four; he is potentially a violent monster when he snaps! What good do you see in him!?" Twilight was panting she used up so much energy in her rant.

"No offense darling, but I would say I see the same good you did when you willingly kissed him in his sleep." Rarity stated matter of factly.

Twilight went completely red. "Yeah Twilight...what is your deal? I can't say I really like Coal that way, but for every bad quality you listed...he has good ones." Dash said with a bit of anger in her voice.

"N-not to make you feel too bad Twilight. I-I-I just have to agree with Dash and Rarity on this one. Surely you have seen the good Coal can do. He helped Dash and defended Rarity. He hasn't done anything like that for me yet, but I think he would if something happened."

Twilight sighed and groaned, she grumbled and grunted, she fumed with frustration. She finally hung her head and gave up. "You're right...you're all right." All eyes were on Twilight. "I think...I think I...like him...that way too." The girls let out a soft almost inaudible gasp. "I feel like I shouldn't admit it, but...I think I do. I have seen the good Coal can do, but these feelings are so confusing! I'm not ready to be completely blinded by romance! I haven't studied or sent letters to Princess Celstia in days! I don't even know why Spike isn't back yet! Coal has completely taken over everything I think and do and it scares me!" Twilight held herself and started to weep. She was so frustrated with everything that had happened. "I just feel like I can't ever do anything to help...you know?"

"Twi-Twilight...darling...you saved his life before; remember?"

"Y-yeah! You levitated Coal off of the farm and took him to the hospital. If you hadn't done that then...well...Coal would of probably died, Scootaloo wouldn't have some pony to take care of her, and Rarity would of been...you know."

They all shuddered at the thought.

"Thanks girls...I needed that" Twilight calming herself tried to switch the direction of the conversation onto another pony. "Well Rainbow...it seems you are the only one among us who isn't giving thoughts to pursuing a relationship with Coal. I wonder if humans emit more pheromones than ponies do. That could explain this...unusual situation. Although that wouldn't explain why you aren't influenced."

Dash twiddled her wings with her hooves not sure of what to say. "Well...I wouldn't say I haven't given it ANY thought. I was the first pony he met after all, and he did help me. Not that I really needed it of course! It was still good of him though...I'm not helping myself any am I?"

The others just shook their heads. "I guess I was wrong then. I wonder if Applejack and Pinkie have thought about it. Well...I know Applejack has, but Pinkie...I would be surprised." Twilight was so tired. She just couldn't bring herself to be ashamed or embarrassed anymore.

"Well darling, it is Pinkie we are talking about. Knowing her...she'd be giving more thought to it than any of us."

They all shook their heads and laughed.

"Well um...I think I know why...if none of you mind my saying." They all looked at Fluttershy. "Most other stallions...they don't really pay us much mind. There aren't that many in Ponyville and we don't have a lot of experience with...males. I-I-I for one don't...I'm sorry...I shouldn't say we don't when I'm not sure."

"No no Fluttershy. I think you are on to something there. He seems to genuinely care about us and...his compliments are really nice too. With the exception of Rarity and Applejack; I don't think any of us have even had a real colt friend before. I haven't...have you Rainbow?" Twilight asked genuinely curious.

"Ehh uhmm ummm well the thing is..." Dash was feeling put on the spot. She was rubbing the back of her head with her hoof trying to come up with something.

"Darling if you haven't had one that is fine. We aren't going to judge you for it darling." Rarity put her hoof on Dash to calm her. "If you don't feel like telling us, well...that is fine too." Rarity gave her a smile and after a moment Dash returned it.

"Ok...I'll tell you the truth, but please don't tell Coal!"

"Why-ever not Rainbow?" Twilight asked. "I don't think Coal would get mad at us for having a colt friend or something."

"It isn't that Twilight. It's...well...this is so hard to say...Ok! What worries me is what Coal did to that stallion after what he 'tried' to do...I don't want to think what Coal would do to a stallion if they 'did' do something."

The girls put the pieces together in their heads and a look of horror and dread spread across their faces. Their pupils shrunk and their breathing started to become irregular. Fluttershy was the first on to respond.

"D-d-dash...I s-see what you're g-getting at...y-you d-don't need t-to tell us. We w-will understand."

"Thank you Fluttershy, but I wasn't raped if that is what you're thinking of." The girls sighed with relief. "Wow...all of you were thinking that?" They bashfully nodded. "Ok no...that didn't happen. What did happen...was pretty close to it though. I was in Flight School and while I was there I would always get picked on by the younger colts. I hadn't earned my cutie mark yet and I didn't have a lot of confidence in myself. I was pretty small for a filly.

Well one day one of the older brothers of the bullies showed up. His name was Home-run. For his age; he was pretty large. He sat and watched as his little brother and friends picked on and teased me. I didn't think anything of it. I was just glad he wasn't joining in. I tried to fight back, but at one point they pinned me on a cloud and I couldn't get loose. They started laughing at me harder and kept forcing my face into the cloud. Home-run told them that isn't how you have fun with a filly. He walked over and picked me up by the back of my head. He raised my body for all of the colts to see. I had managed to keep from crying, but now I was really scared and started to tear up a little. He looked me up and down a few times before saying something like 'this one is too small for some real fun, but I think I could get something out of her'. H-He then used me t-t-t-to...."

Dash couldn't keep going. The memories were playing back out in front of her. She always took so much pride in herself, but she had no pride back then. Remembering herself when she was so weak was all it took for her to break down. She held back her tears this time, but she started to shake. She put her hooves to her eyes to try and fight the tears better. The others had gotten up and moved around her at this point and they all held her close. Dash managed to calm down after several minutes of contact with her friends.

"Darling...you can stop. We don't need to know so badly that it is going to hurt you."

"Rarity is right Rainbow. I'm sorry for asking you about it." Twilight looked to Fluttershy hoping

she would offer some words of encouragement as well.

Fluttershy was having a hard time not crying for Dash and just nuzzled into her. With all this comfort Dash found the strength to continue.

"I-I can finish. I...I won't say what he did, but I'll tell you that after that incident...I never trusted males. I thought they would all hurt me if I let them. So when Coal helped me...I couldn't help but wonder if maybe I had been wrong. That is probably where my feelings are coming from, but please don't tell any other pony! It would totally ruin my reputation!"

"We won't darling. Cross my heart-hope to fly-stick a cupcake in my eye."

The girls shared a good laugh before deciding it was past time to call it a day. They said their goodbyes and went about their way. After confessing her darkest secret though...Dash felt she needed to give Coal another visit. Maybe he had woken up.

* * * *

Author's notes: I'm sure Twilight seemed to be pretty out of character in this for some. Each character has a breaking point. Mine was when Rarity was about to get raped and Twilight has been putting up with an awful lot. It seemed like a good time for her to finally lose her composure. She has taken it in stride, but she is only a young mare after all. As for the Dash story...I can be such an ass! I had to give an explanation as for why she wasn't fond of males...and that was the only thing I could come up with. I didn't want her full blown raped, but...you guys will find out what happened later. I'll just say this now: I'm very very sorry, and I'll take my beating like a very girly man!

Chapter 25: I hate Interruptions!

"Augh! I am sooo bored!" Life sucks right now lemme tell ya. I've been in this damn bed by myself for what feels like hours. If there was a clock in here I would tell you, but again I CAN'T FUCKING MOVE! I used to think it didn't matter what was going on, as long as I was in Equestria then I would be happy...WRONG! I have waaay too much on my mind to be putting up with this shit! I need to get a message to the Apples. I need to get Coco paid...wait...I still have a couple days for that. Ok...so maybe things aren't so bad. Surely I'll be out of here by then, but who is going to take care of the farm? Curse my stupid weak body and whatever other things ponies curse! Wait...I'm not a pony...FUCK! I have spent too much time in here as it is. I need something interesting to happen...I don't care what it is!

At that moment the door to my room bursts open and I hear Dash talking to me.

"Hey Coal...wow...you look messed up!"

"Thanks for your kind words Dashie...I never would of guessed that my current appearance was sub par. I will now get up and prepare myself to be seen by a lady such as yourself. Wait...hold that thought a moment if you would...ah yes I have discovered the problem! I CAN'T MOVE!" I groaned and just forcefully laughed at myself. "In all seriousness I'm glad you're here Dashie. I was about to go insane from boredom!"

Dash was laughing her cute little flank off (DON'T. JUDGE. ME). I couldn't see her, but if I had to guess she had probably fallen over. Her laughing was so cute I didn't even care that she was laughing at me. I was mostly pissed I couldn't blow raspberries on her belly! That would of made her freak! So much fun!

"Ahaha! Hmmm...you said you can't move?" Dash walked up to the side of my bed and I could tell she was giving me a weird look. I was sweating bullets.

"Uhhhh...please don't hurt me I'm weak?" She fell over laughing again. I'm starting to see a pattern here. "Good...as long as I can keep her on the floor with my words...she won't be able to take advantage of the situation. Quick! Come up with something witty!" She stopped laughing and pulled herself onto the bed. I could see her now. She was giving me the 'bed room' eyes. I'm sure it wasn't her intention to look so sexy. FUUUUUUUUUUUUU~

"I don't think it is going to help you now Coal! You are mine now! AHAHAHAHAHAH~"

I apologize to all involved in what is about to happen. "So...I'm your...pet? servant?...kinky" She fell off the bed. She fell off the fucking bed! "Thank you lord for blessing me with the power to defeat the pony!"

"Oh Coal!" she was crying she was laughing so hard. "I really like your sense of humor! I'm glad you're doing better." She cuddled up right next to me. I couldn't move my arms, but I could feel the heat coming off of her.

"Thanks Dashie...I'm glad you stopped by. I always enjoy getting to spend time with you." I managed to turn my head a little to see Dash staring at me. My face flushed a little and I had to look away.

"Mmmm?" Dash was giving me a rather sultry look. "You like spending time with me huh? Are you trying to tell me something Coal?" She put her hoof gently on my belly. I was really starting to freak out. When I freak out; I start acting like a moron.

"Ahahahaha (<---- nervous laugh) I uhhh....uhhh."

"Mmmm?" Dash leaned in to my ear and started to whisper. "We are all alone you know...I'll be gentle..."

I lost it...I fucking lost it! "Y-you huh ha...wha..eh ah uh ah....WHAT!?"

She started laughing harder than she ever had before. She was crying and laughing and crying some more and laughing some more...it was a mess!

"That was cruel....that was so cruel...I don't even know you anymore Dashie..." She rolled right off the bed (again?) and continued to laugh.

"Do I need to call the nurse and have you sedated? You're going to dent their floors if you keep this up!"

She was laughing so hard now that she couldn't breath. The noise stopped and her face was just contorted into a look of pure amusement.

I couldn't let her get away with all that. I had to try and freak her out now. I think I know how I am going to do it too, but I'm scared she is going to kick my ass...worth it. "Oh man Dashie! You tease! How are you going to get me in the mood for some Dash lovin' and make it a joke. *exasperated groan* I am so troubled right now, you have no idea! Darn my male hormones! You have foiled me once again!" The laughing had stopped long before I finished. I was just too caught up in my joking to notice. The silence started to make me uncomfortable. "Too much or too soon?"

She got back on the bed and stood over me. She was giving me an odd look. She leaned in very close to my face. We were about one inch apart and I would have a lip-full of awesome. I never wanted something so bad. I could feel her breath on me; she was looking at me right in the eyes. My mind was starting to go blank and I started to get some feeling in my body back. I don't know if my excitement spurred it on, but I didn't care...I just wanted Dash.

"D-Dashie?"

"Coal..." My vision was starting to shake. I was way past excited now. I wanted her; I needed her; I had to have her. But I couldn't bring myself to take it from her. If this is something else entirely; if she is just picking on me some more...then I could ruin a great friendship if I went in for it. No matter how badly I wanted it...it had to be given the first time.

"Y-yes?"

She leaned back and sat on my stomach (much to both my relief and disappointment). "I want to ask you something...but I don't know how you will react."

I sighed and let some peace creep over me. She only wanted my attention; nothing more; nothing less. "If it is something I can answer...I will."

Dash nodded. "Would you be mad at me...if I told you that the girls and I...we know some stuff about you. Stuff that we probably shouldn't..." Dash was looking at me intently, but with fear in her eyes.

I knew instantly what she was talking about. She was talking about when Twilight had heard me talking to myself and I knew that because I had listened in on them. It was a deadly circle of dishonesty. "I know that Twilight heard me Dashie. I heard you girls at the party. I'm sorry I listened in. I know I shouldn't have, but I was too scared to leave after it started."

Dash had a look of surprise on her face, but it quickly disappeared. "We also heard you when you were in the tree Coal. At the edge of the forest. We were there during the middle of your song and for most of what happened after." She had looked away from me. I don't know if she felt guilty or what, but I know I did.

"Y-you all heard...all of that? N-No....oh god....no..." I was about to start tearing up when Dash looked back at me. She too was looking like she was on the verge of tears. I had to be strong here. We both may be adults, but I am several years older. "Dashie, I...are you girls mad at me for what you heard? I...I'm not mad at you girls for hearing it. I'm just mad at myself for being so stupid..."

Dash put her hoof to my lips to silence me. Once I stopped she laid down on top of me. Her body rubbed against my newly reopened wounds, but I didn't care. She was soft...and warm. She put her cheek right on mine. We couldn't see each other now, but I could feel her heart beating.

"We aren't mad at you Coal...we are scared for you. Why are you so hard on yourself? You don't need to be able to control everything, but we all know that you mean well. You have friends now Coal...you can rely on us. We aren't going to leave you."

I used what little strength I had and put my arms around Dash. I couldn't really hold her, but I relished the warmth from her body. She felt so light and she smelt like the sky after a good rain. It was the smell of clean freshness. It made me miss home, but only for a moment. We held each other for several minutes before I started talking again. "I know I told you and Fluttershy about my...being attracted to you girls and that you two didn't mind too much, but...do the others dislike the idea?"

Dash started to tighten her grip on me. It should of really hurt, but I couldn't bring myself to feel anything but comfort. I wanted to kiss her. I really did. "No Coal...they don't care about that. Most of them kinda feel the same way..." I could feel Dash flinch after making that statement.

I was in shock...my feelings weren't entirely one sided, but Dash's reaction led me to believe that she wasn't supposed to confess that. I had to try and reassure her, but I was still in a bit of shock myself. "I take it that you weren't really supposed to admit that...were you?" I could feel

Dash shake her head against my cheek. "Don't worry Dashie...I won't tell any pony that I know, but...d-do...do you feel that way?" I immediately regretted asking that, but I had to know!

Dash lifted herself up from my cheek and looked at me. She had such a soft expression on her face, but she was troubled. "You don't have to answer that Dashie, but...I want you to know that...I...I..." before I could finish Dash leaned in and planted her lips upon mine. My eyes shot open, but started to roll into the back of my head at the contact. I was hurt yes, but it wasn't like with Applejack. I was very much in my right mind and could enjoy every millisecond of it. Her lips were softer and a little smaller than Applejack's, but she was more forceful. She leaned in further and further. I couldn't feel anything but our contact anymore. She had complete and total control over me. She kissed me like that for several minutes. My mind was blank...all I knew...all I could know...was that I loved this pony and I didn't want this to end.

After what felt like only seconds; the door to the room swung open making Dash jump back off the bed. At the loss of the contact I could now think again. I could feel my body slowly building of strength. I started pulling myself up the bed, so that I would be leaning upright. I could now see everything and in the doorway...was a very surprised little filly. It was Scootaloo....FUCK!

* * * *

School was dragging on for Scootaloo. Cherilee was going over multiplication today and she should of been paying attention, but she was too worried about Coal. It didn't help the fact that the whole school knew about what had happened with her step-mom. Diamond Tiara and Silver Spoon had been giving her grief over it all morning! When the bell finally went off signaling lunch and then afternoon break; Scootaloo almost squee'd in delight.

Because of the incident with that stallion at Rarity's; Coal didn't have the ability to give Scootaloo anything for lunch, but Fluttershy had been nice enough to fly home and bring back Scootaloo a simple bag lunch.

She joined Applebloom and Sweetie Belle at their usual spot, but didn't pay attention to where she was going and bumped into Silver Spoon and Diamond Tiara.

"Watch where you're going blank flank!"

"Yeah! We wouldn't want to catch any of your diseases!"

The two bullies huffed and went about their way. Scootaloo would of been angrier, but she really wanted to tell the girls about Coal.

"What jerks! Ah can't stand those two!" Applebloom stated taking a bite out of her apple.

"They are really mean! I wish they would just leave us alone!" said Sweetie Belle with a little

squeak in her voice.

"Yeah they are jerks, but I don't care about them today." Scootaloo sat down across from her friends and opened up the lunch. She pulled out a simple daisy sandwich and began eating it with gusto.

"Wow Scootaloo, that is mighty big of ya. Ah always though ya would be the one ta' get the most mad at them girls."

"After the couple of days I've had...I don't think those girls deserve my attention."

"Why? I mean...I know you're having trouble with your mom, but I thought you would be angrier about it. If you need a place to stay; I'll try and convince Rarity to let you stay with me. *squee* It'll be just like a sleep over! Applebloom, we'll have to try and get you over too!"

Scootaloo shook her head. "Thanks Sweetie Belle, but I don't need a place to stay. I already have one."

Sweetie Belle and Applebloom looked at each other confused. Sweetie Belle piped up saying: "You do? Where at? and with who?"

"Yes I do. I have a room at the inn outside of the market district. I'm staying there by myself."

"Wow! Ya'll are already livin' by yerself!? Where did ya get the money fer a room there!?"

"Coal is paying for it. He umm...he is kinda like my dad now..." Scootaloo looked away blushing a bit.

Applebloom went wide-eyed and yelled out "WHAT!? As in the human Coal!?"

"Yes, do you know any pony else named Coal?"

"Naw Ah don't, but...REALLY!? How did this happen?"

Sweetie Belle was feeling a bit left in the dark about the situation. "Who is Coal?"

"Ah didn't tell ya about him yet!?"

"Eeep! N-no I don't think so."

"Well...Ah could ah sworn Ah at least told ya about the new farm help."

"HMMMM..."

"He saved Rarity yesterday Sweetie Belle! Are you saying that you don't know the guy who saved your sister, works for your best friend, and is basically your other friend's dad!?"

"I'm sorry! I guess I just don't pay attention too well!"

"Ah'd say not, but it ain't ah big deal Ah guess."

"What is he like?"

"He is really nice! I met him the night my step-mom kicked me out for getting into more trouble. Long story short he made me feel a lot better. After I did some pretty un-cool things first though..."

Scootaloo was cut off my Diamond Tiara and Silver Spoon walking back over to them.

"We couldn't help but overhear; since you're so loud. Did we hear you say that the human Coal, is basically your dad?" Diamond Tiara asked with a bit of snoot in her voice.

"So what if he is?"

"Hmph, I'd say that you are a liar."

"What!? I am not!"

"Yeah! she ain't lying! Now why don't ya git outta here! This doesn't matter to ya anyways!"

Silver Spoon stepped up and took Diamond Tiara's place. "My mother told me that this Coal is a menace. That humans don't care about ponies and he is only biding his time before he will start to have his way with all of us...whatever that means."

"It means your mom is full of it!" Scootaloo was getting very angry at this point. "Anything that would do something like Coal did for me, is not a menace!"

"Hmph, he may be a human, but he sure picks ponies just like himself!" Diamond Tiara stated moving up next to Silver Spoon.

"Now what in da hay does that mean!?"

"Coal is a menace and you three are too! You're always getting into trouble or breaking something trying to get your cutie marks. Ha-Ha-Ha! Come Silver Spoon; I've had enough of these losers for today!" With that Diamond Tiara and Silver Spoon left the lunch room and went outside.

"Ah can't stand those ponies!"

"You and me both Applebloom!" Sweetie Belle said.

"*sigh*"

"What's wrong Scootaloo? Don't tell me those two are makin' ya doubt Coal..."

"No no; nothing like that. I'm just worried about him is all. He is in the hospital again after his wounds reopened or something. I didn't even know he was hurt to begin with!"

"Now come on! Ah'm sure Ah told both of ya what happened at ma' farm!"

"No...I don't think so Applebloom. At least I didn't hear anything about it.

"I didn't hear about that either!" Sweetie Belle exclaimed.

"You never hear anything Sweetie Belle, but it doesn't matter if we knew about it or not now. Do you two want to go visit him after school?"

"Ah wish ah could, but we just got back from Appleloosa real early this mornen'. Ah have ta' get back on ma' chores."

"How about you Sweetie Belle?"

"Rarity wants us to spend some time together today. I think she is trying to get over what happened."

"Well gees! I was hoping my friends could come with me to try and cheer up Coal! I guess I'll have to try by myself!"

The rest of the day went much the same. The three friends played outside for a while; they then finished up class and went their separate ways. Scootaloo road on her scooter straight to the hospital. She soon arrived and parked it outside. She went in and the nurse recognized her; she then waved her to Coal's room. When Scootaloo arrived outside of his door; she could hear Dash talking with Coal, but she couldn't understand it. She pressed her ear to the door, but it was still too muffled. She pulled herself up the door in order to look into the room. She saw Dash on top of Coal...kissing him. She was so shocked she fell and hit the doorknob. The door flung open leaving a very confused Scootaloo sitting in the doorway.

Chapter 26: Fatherhood is Bliss

"H-hey Scoots! I-I didn't see you there!" Dash greeted her nervously.

"Hey Scootaloo! Thanks for stopping by. I was hoping I would get to see you before too long."
"Ohhhh hell~ how much did she see~!?"

"D-Dash!?...w-what were you doing o-on C-Coal!?"

We both stared at Scootaloo in horror. That was definitely what you wouldn't call a...public moment. Thankfully Dash managed to take charge of the situation.

"Well Scoots...you know Coal likes hugs right?"

"S-sure..."

"They make him feel better...and I was on him trying to give him a hug, but it was kind of awkward..."

"O-oh...I see. Whew! For a second there it looked like you and Coal were kissing!"

I nearly choked! "That is some imagination you have there Scootaloo."

"Yeah I know...but I was kinda hoping you two were kissing..."

I did choke this time..."Aha! Ok Scootaloo; I'm not sure I want to know this one..."

"Well...since you're kinda like my dad now...if you and Dash were together...then she would be like my mom!" At the end of her sentence Scootaloo put on a big smile and flapped her wings in excitement.

Dash was somehow managing to stay very composed. I don't know if she was embarrassed or not, but I was very thankful she was at least in control of herself.

"Hehe, you're a funny squirt Scoots. I'm gonna take off; bye Scoots..." she turns to me and gives me a little wink "...bye Coal."

I start turning red again and she chuckles a bit to herself. On her way out she rubs the top of Scootaloo's head before leaving.

I then turn my attention to Scootaloo. She was watching Dash fly off...and then it hit me. She called me 'dad'. Not really, but close enough to make my mind go blank. "Scootaloo..."

"Yeah Coal?" She said still looking after Dash.

"Did...did you just call me dad?"

Her ears dropped and she started twiddling her hooves. "I-is that bad?"

"No! No of course not...it makes me really happy is all..."

She turns to look at me. Her big purple eyes were looking a little moist. I was a little scared she would start to cry again. I'm in the hospital after having just gotten done kissing my personal hero and fantasy. Going from that to crying little filly would break my neck because of whiplash!

"R-really? I know that you said you would take care of me...and that you loved me, but..."

"I don't know what's on your mind Scootaloo, but don't worry about it. Now come on over here and give me a hug. I don't think I can have this conversation with you all the way over there."

She put on a small smile and walked over to the side of the bed. With some flaps from her wings and a big jump from the ground; she made just enough altitude to make it on the bed. She curled up next to me and rested her head on my chest. I put my hand on her back and started rubbing her wings. Wings are actually a lot softer than they look (and they look pretty damn soft!). I imagined they were as soft as a cloud. She seemed to enjoy the touch, and I was enjoying her company.

"Now Scootaloo...why don't you tell me what is on your mind?"

She gave me a sad smile. "Coal...why are you being so nice to me?"

"What do you mean Scootaloo? Do you not like my affections?"

"No! I mean...I don't understand it. You caught me doing something bad and...you decide to take care of me? It just doesn't make a whole lot of sense. I'm really glad you are though! It's just a little weird..."

"I understand what you mean Scootaloo, but I've never been one for making a lot of sense. My simply being in this world doesn't make any sense."

She held her head up and gave me a weird look. "Did I never tell you that?" She shook her head. "Twilight brought me here by accident with a spell. I'm actually from a completely different world. I decided to stay though, so don't worry. I won't ever be leaving you." Scootaloo crawled up my chest and rested her head on my shoulder. I was able to put my arm around her more easily thanks to their natural shape. I did miss rubbing her wings though, so I pulled my other arm over and continued where I left off. She gave me another gentle smile before snuggling her face into my chest.

"C-Coal?"

"Yes Scootaloo?"

"C-can...can I call you dad?"

I was a bit taken back. I wasn't expecting that, but I was not complaining of course! "You would make me so very happy if you would."

"I love you...dad."

"I love you too sweetheart." She then started to fall asleep in my arms. The moment was so peaceful that even though I had basically been sleeping all day...I couldn't help myself. We both fell asleep in each others embrace.

* * * *

"Wow that was awkward..." Dash said to herself leaving the hospital. "I can't believe what I did in there....hehe" Dash took off into the sky and relaxed in the clouds. All she could think about was what the future would hold. Was what she had done a good idea, was there a way to make this work, what would tomorrow bring? She was about to drift off into sleep on her cloud when she heard some yelling.

"Hay RD! Is that ya up there!? Ah need ta' talk to ya!"

She looked over the edge and saw the give away cowboy hat. "Hey AJ! You're back from Appleloosa already huh? What do you need to talk about?" Dash flew down and landed next to Applejack.

"Yeah we just got back real early this morning. Ah made Applebloom go ta' school anyway. Can't be havin' her fall behind and all. Anyway, what is the story with Coal? He didn't show up at mah farm today."

"Oh yeah, Coal is in the hospital again." Dash stated rather bluntly

"What!?"

"Hey calm down AJ! Coal is fine. He overexerted himself and his wounds reopened. Nothing too serious, but they commissioned an extra strength healing brew from Zecora. Coal doesn't know it yet, but later she should stop by the hospital and give it to him."

"Iff'n they had something like that before, why didn't they give that ta' him when he was nearly dead?"

"Zecora didn't have the herbs needed at the time. I don't know how long this potion will take to fix him up though."

"Ya know an awful lot about this Dash...what happened to him anyway? Wait...overexerted...Dash...ya'll didn't..."

"No!" Dash fell back on her flank she yelled so hard. "No we didn't do THAT! Coal protected Rarity from that creep of an ex-colt friend of hers. He beat the foal so hard he reopened his wounds!"

"Well Ah'll be...how bad did Coal beat him?"

Dash put on a wicked smile. "I didn't think you were that sadistic AJ..."

"Now come on Dash! It ain't nothin' like that! Ah'm just curious how much ya have to beat some pony in order to hurt yerself in the process."

"Haha! That is what you get for suggesting Coal and I did it!" Dash blushed at her own statement. Applejack just laughed at her. "Whatever...Coal pretty much beat him until anymore beating would of killed him."

"Whoa...isn't that a bit...ya know; too much?"

"I don't think so. Rarity told me all about it. Apparently the creep was going to rape her, and Coal took it more than personally and beat him senseless."

"Shioot! Ah'm surprised Coal didn't kill him then! Ah know he is very appreciative of all Rarity has done for em!"

"You're telling me AJ...are you going to pay Coal a visit?"

"Ah can't at the moment. Ah just needed ta' find out what happened to em. Now Ah need ta' get back to the farm."

"That is probably a good idea. He is probably still with Scootaloo anyway..."

"Huh? Now why is he with Scootaloo?"

"Oh gees! You didn't know about that yet! Ok...you're getting the quick version. If you want the long version go to Twilight or Coal." Applejack was a little reluctant to accept, but nodded her head in understanding. "Coal is now Scootaloo's unofficial dad. I imagine he is going to be needing his pay from all his farm work soon."

"What!? I'm gone for ah day and Coal is back in the hospital and he has ah kid!? Ah need to stop leavin!"

"Hahahahah! No kidding AJ! Well anyway; I know you need to get back to your farm. Maybe Scootaloo told Applebloom about it if you're still curious. Later!" With that Dash flew off leaving Applejack a little annoyed.

"Darn flyin' ponies..."

* * * *

"This is getting to be more common that it should be..." Twilight was brooding over this latest incident with Coal. "Ok let's see...there were the two times he was caught talking to himself, the situation with Big Mac, the bathroom incident with Rarity, this latest incident with Rarity, making himself Scootaloo's dad for the most part...I think that is it." Twilight sighed and shook her head. She was just happy that she finally had time to get back to her studies. She had just opened a book and had begun to relax when the front door slammed open.

"Aaargh! WHAT!?" She turned to see a very surprised Spike in the doorway. "Oh Spike! Sorry...hehe..."

"D-don't worry about it Twilight."

"So Spike...how was your talk with the princess?"

"Well...ask her yourself."

"Wha..." Just then princess Celestia stepped in behind Spike. "Princess Celestia!" Twilight ran over and gave her mentor a hug.

"It is so good to see you Twilight."

"It is good to see you too princess!" Twilight let go of the princess and motioned for Spike to prepare some tea (he knew what it meant). "Not that I'm unhappy to see you princess, but...why are you all the way down here?"

"Oh! Well I wanted to hear from you what has been going on with this human Coal since Spike came to Canterlot. I'm very sorry I kept him from you for so long. I very much enjoyed having his company again. He is very good with books."

Twilight could hear Spike groan from the kitchen. She could only chuckle imagining what the princess was having him do.

"Well let me see princess...you know everything up to Coal being hurt by Big Macintosh; correct?"

"That is correct Twilight."

"Ok well...I think you better take a seat princess. There has been a lot of new headaches with Coal."

Twilight, Spike, and Celestia sat around the kitchen table drinking tea; while Twilight was going over every major thing that had happened. She talked about Coal going back to work, the party and the incident that followed (she left out the specifics of what words were used mind you), she didn't talk about her personal incident, but the princess could tell that Twilight was hiding something. Thankfully the princess didn't pursue it. Twilight continued on with Coal deciding to take care of Scootaloo and this latest incident with Rarity's ex. When Twilight finished the princess raised her head and looked off into the distance as she was in deep contemplation.

Spike was rather uncomfortable with it and decided to break the ice. "It sounds like the last few days have been really busy for you Twilight."

"Oh they have Spike. I'm just glad you're back so that I can finally get back to some studying!"

"Twilight..." Princess Celestia spoke up. "Where is Coal now? I would like to talk with him."

Twilight gulped a little not too sure if she should be worried or not. "H-he isn't in any trouble...is he?"

"No no dear Twilight. I just want to thank him for protecting my little ponies. That and I am curious as to what he looks like. Spike told me about it, but there is no substitute for the real thing."

"I understand princess. I'll take you to him now if you like."

"That won't be necessary Twilight. I know how important your studies are, and I have already taken up plenty of your time. If you would be so kind as to simply tell me where he is; I'll be on my way."

"It isn't any trouble princess! I would be mo..." The princess raised her hoof to silence Twilight. She knew what it meant and decided to drop it. "...he should still be at the hospital. My friend Zecora is supposed to be bringing him an extra strength healing brew shortly. If you leave now you should have him to yourself for a little while."

"Thank you Twilight. It was wonderful to see you."

With that the princess took her leave for the hospital; leaving a slightly disappointed Twilight and a confused Spike in her wake.

Chapter 27: I love potions!

"Awwhhhh" I let out a gentle yawn coming back to.

Scotaloo was still snuggled up in my arm just like when I had fallen asleep. She was so darling, I really just wanted to pick her up and love her forever. She is so unbelievably cute when she sleeps! I can only compare her to like the cutest puppy you have ever seen. Except this is a very smart puppy, and she can say that she loves me instead of just peeing on the carpet...what am I talk about again? I have no idea...I just woke up.

I could now feel my whole body again. I didn't feel very strong, but I could get up and move around if I wanted to. There was something new in the room on an end-stand near my bed. It was a small glass vial that had a note on it.

The note read: 'This is an extra strength healing potion from Zecora. You were asleep so she decided to leave it with you. Be warned! Once you drink this you're going to start getting very uncomfortable. Do try and not disturb that bundle in your arms too much.' I laughed to myself a little at the nurse's humor. I really didn't want to wake Scootaloo up, but I needed to get this over with. Besides, if she sleeps all day she won't sleep tonight. I don't want a report from Coco saying Scootaloo kept the whole inn up that night.

I picked up the vial and downed it in one gulp. It was a foul tasting brew, but I could instantly feel it starting to work. All my clothes except my sleeping shorts had been removed (thank god those were left). I was able to watch the bruising on my chest slowly start to change color and recede. It was honestly pretty entrancing. I was starting to wonder when the 'uncomfortableness' was going to start...and immediately regretted cursing myself.

It felt like my chest was on fire! It was so damn hot and painful! I gently pulled my arm out from Scootaloo and managed to get out of the bed without waking her. I couldn't walk the pain was starting to get to me so much! I had to crawl to the other side of the room so that I wouldn't disturb Scootaloo. It hurt like you wouldn't believe! I was panting and sweating profusely! The floor around me started to glisten with puddles as the sweat gathered underneath me. I sat there for what felt like hours. Every time I thought the pain was going to pass; it only got worse. I was honestly having a hard time keeping my bladder under control. Nobody likes to talk about that when they are in pain, but screw it I will! The stronger the pain got; the more of a need I felt to try and hold it! Unfortunately there wasn't a bathroom connected to the hospital room. I just had to sit there and suffer. I was starting to lose control of my body. My breathing became forced and irregular and my vision started to blur. I fell over on my side and couldn't bring myself to get up. The sweat had pooled around me and it felt sticky and unpleasant. The smell was the worst

though. It smelt like burning flesh and dried onion juice. I couldn't believe Scootaloo was able to stay asleep with that smell in the air.

I had almost lost consciousness when the pain started to recede. My vision slowly started to return and my breathing calmed. I was able pull myself off the floor and lean against the wall. My body was still felt very hot, but the pain was almost gone now. I was left panting a little, but soon I started feeling...well...pretty damn awesome! The strength in my limbs started to return to me and I felt confidence starting to return as well. I looked down at my chest to find the damage completely gone. The skin had returned to it's normal pale color and there were no scars left from the injury. I ran my fingers through my hair sighing in relief. The worst was over and now I felt great. There was a tingling in my chest that wasn't going away, but it didn't hurt so~...whatevs! "Why didn't I get this stuff before!?" Maybe it was really expensive or something I don't know! Ooooh...I hope not. I don't have much as it is...wait...who is paying for my medical bills!?

I stepped out of the hospital room and flagged down a nurse. I explained to her what happened and asked if she had a rag or something so I could clean up my mess. She told me not to worry about it and asked me to wait in the room. Before I left though, I had to ask her how this was all being paid for. She told me not to worry about it and to relax. I was a pretty curious, but didn't argue. I went back inside to find Scootaloo just now starting to wake up. She rubbed her eyes and let out a big yawn (So.EFFING.CUTE!). She looked surprised when she realized I wasn't in the bed, but calmed down when I stepped behind her.

"Afternoon sleepy head. Enjoy your nap?"

"You slept too you know." Scootaloo continued to rub her eyes a bit. "What are you doing out of bed Coal? Aren't you still hurt?"

"Nope! I drank a healing potion Zecora left for me a little bit ago. Now I think I'm fully healed! Isn't that amazing!?"

Scootaloo beamed at me and jumped into my arms giving me a big hug. "I'm glad you're better Coal! I was pretty scared this morning when the nurses told me what happened!"

"I'm sorry I worried you sweetheart, but I'm all better now. The nurse I just talked to wanted me to wait in here for a little while. I'm not sure why, but you don't have to stick around if you're bored. I bet she wants me to fill out some boring paperwork. Why don't you go flag down one of your friends and have a nice evening. I'll stop by the inn tonight and tuck you in."

Scootaloo gave me a big kiss on the cheek and bounced out the door. I just wanted to hug that filly to death she was so damn cute! Argh!

I fixed up the bed and started stretching out on the floor. Even though I felt great; my body still

felt pretty stiff. I was there stretching for a good ten minutes before the door opened up behind me.

"Yes?" I turned around to see princess Celestia looking at me. "Oh my..." I was gawking at her. She was as tall as I was, but looked a lot bigger. She didn't even have her wings outstretched and she still made me feel small and weak. I have to say this though...she is beautiful. Not in a 'I want to ride you all night long baby' (I have to just stop and shake my head sometimes at this crap!) kind of way, but beautiful in a powerful, majestic kind of way. She stepped in the room and closed the door behind her. (I'm very scared...)

"I-I'm Coal! W-who are you miss~?"

"I'm princess Celestia. Ruler of Equestria, but you may just call me Celestia. It is very nice to meet you Coal!"

"Oh my f-forgive me!" I got on my knees and put me forehead on the floor, as well as my hands out in front of me. I don't know why I felt the need to prostrate myself like that, but this is the one pony I really want to like me! That and Luna at a close second. 'Why?' Because they are the only two who could probably send me back without a second thought if they didn't like me. That is why!

She chuckled a little at my display. "There is no need for that Coal, but thank you for showing me respect. You may be in my kingdom, but I am not your ruler as of yet."

"Oh but you are princess Celestia! I don't want to return to my world; which means I'll be staying here...if that is alright with you anyway. If it is; that would make you my princess too! Being from different worlds doesn't matter to me. You lead such wonderful ponies; you have nothing if not my respect!"

"Thank you Coal, but please do rise. I would like to get a proper look at you." I did as I was asked, but in nothing but my boxers I felt a little naked and ashamed. "I can't say I have in all my years seen a creature like you Coal. You walk on two legs, and you don't seem to have any natural defenses. Are humans a venomous kind of creature?"

"What? N-no, why would you.....Oh!...Oh! You're wondering how something that basically looks harmless could get along in a world that you have heard to be very unpleasant, or something like that, right?"

"That is exactly what I was wondering. I'm sorry if that comes across as a little rude of me Coal."

"No no, not at all princess Celestia..."

"Just Celestia...please"

"Y-yes pri...Celestia" She gave me a soft smile. I was very happy to not be screwing this up.

"Well Celestia, it is true that my species doesn't exactly have any natural weapons. What we do have however; I think is a lot more powerful."

"What would that be?"

"We have diversity and ingenuity. We make tools to perform the tasks we need doing." I lifted up my hand to demonstrate my points. "With our fingers and thumb, we can grip things easily. We don't have magic like ponies do, but my people have made tools that can do most things. Unfortunately, that also includes weapons of war." I SHOULDN'T HAVE FUCKEN SAID THAT!

"Weapons of war? Spike and Twilight have told me many things about you, but they didn't tell me that you come from a world with war."

"W-well...that is because I didn't tell them that. I myself lived in what could be called a peaceful area, but the truth is that my whole planet hates each other. My people have made weapons and tools to kill other people over anything and everything since the start of my species. I understand if you have mixed feelings about me because of that, but please trust me when I say that I don't mean harm to any pony!" Just then I remember about Earl Grey...I knew I had to tell her that. If she is going to trust me; I have to be completely honest. There is no fooling a creature that old! "Well...that isn't true...you see I...I hurt a pony yesterday...on purpose; with good reason of course! I..."

Celestia raised her hoof to silence me. I happily, but with much fear; obliged. "Twilight told me of the incident with the potential rapist. I do not scorn you for doing what you did. In fact, I wanted to thank you for protecting my ponies."

"R-really?"

"Yes Coal, really. I can't say I'm happy to hear about your world like this though, but I understand why you don't want to return. I have no problems with you staying here Coal. I believe you can do great things, and I hope to be hearing about them soon."

"Th-thank you so much Celestia! I can't express how happy that makes me!" She stepped back a little at my outburst. She put on a nervous expression and started looking around. "Celestia?"

"Oh my! Sorry Coal, it's just...Spike and Twilight told me what you do when you're very happy."

"Oh....OH! OH!" I fell on the floor laughing my ass off. I couldn't help it! I just made the most powerful and oldest creature in this world nervous because I may hug her! "That is too funny Celestia! Don't worry though, I know better than to do that to royalty."

She giggled at me a little bit. "I don't mind too much Coal. Come over here, I think you deserve one."

I went immediately silent. I wasn't about to turn her down though. I got up and gave her a very respectful and pleasant hug. Celestia being a lot bigger than other ponies made her a lot more fun to hug. There is just more of her! She returned the gesture by putting one hoof around me. We held that for a moment before breaking contact.

"Thank you so much for coming to visit me Celestia! It was such a pleasure to meet you!"

"The feeling is mutual Coal. Do try and take better care of yourself though. I don't like hearing about my subjects being harmed." She flashed me a warm smile before her horn glowed and she disappeared in a blinding light.

"Did she just call me one of her subjects....awesome!"

Shortly after her departure the nurse came in with my release forms. I filled them out the best I could and I was dismissed. My clothes were brought to me and upon getting dressed I left.

The cool crisp air was the first thing to greet me. It felt wonderful, but I was still covered in dried sweat (how did the princess not mind this!?). I made my way back to the farm. I was going to try and catch up on some chores, take a shower, and then go to the inn to tuck in Scootaloo. It was about mid afternoon at this point. I reached the farm gate and saw Big Mac heading into the barn.

"Oh they're back!...oh...they're back...shit!" I was worried they may be pretty pissed at me for what happened. I had a sudden urge to run. I figured I may as well get this over and ran along the path to the barn. Now...I say ran, but I ended up sprinting. I have never run so fast in my life! It felt fan-freaking-tastic! My lungs filled with cool air and my legs were pumping like machines. I probably set some kind of personal record for time, but I couldn't really focus. I stopped just outside the barn and took a moment to catch my breath (still no endurance...damnit).

"Hey Big Mac? You in here?"

"Eeeeyup" Big Mac came around a pile of hay and looked me over. "Ya'll look like you've been workin' real hard; what happened ta being in the hospital?"

"Zecora dropped off a super strong healing brew. I'm completely healed, but the process was awful. I should probably be dehydrated right now I was sweating so much."

Big Mac gave a small chuckle. "Ah think Ah know which one ya had then. Ah got hurt ah ways back and she made me drink ah potion that hurt like buck!"

"Mac...I know exactly what you mean! I didn't want to say it, but that was the most pain I have ever been in! It was totally worth it though! Don't get me wrong; I feel like a million bits!"

"Glad ta' hear it Coal. Don't worry about any chores today. Why don't ya get a shower and take the rest of the afternoon off. Ya can get back to workin' tomorrow."

"That sounds fantastic Big Mac; thank you very much!"

"Eeeyup!"

With that we went our separate ways. My first stop was to get a shower and then put on some different clothes. I've been wearing these clothes for days now! Even if they have been cleaned; it just doesn't feel right. I head into the farmhouse and make my way to my bedroom (that is so awesome). It was a simple room. There was bed against the wall opposite of the door, there was a closet to the left of the door and a desk to the right of the bed. There was also a dresser against the wall with the door. On the dresser I saw all of the clothes Rarity had made for me; as well as the clothes I came here in.

There was also a brown bag with a note on it. 'Dear Coal, Here are some simpler clothes that I had Rarity make up. You look very nice in her fancier ones, but I know you want something a bit simpler. I hope you like them. - Twilight'

"I'm going to have to hug that pony soon..." I open the bag to find two pair of simple blue pants (much like jeans, but of different material) and several solid colored polo shirts. I decided on my clothes and promptly jumped in the shower. I got cleaned up, dressed, and decided my first stop should be to check on Rarity!

Chapter 28: Play Date

"Oh there are soo many orders!" Rarity was running herself ragged trying to catch up on all the work she has missed. "Oh dear oh dear oh dear oh dear..."

"Is there anything I can do to help sis?" Sweetie Belle was sitting to the side watching Rarity running back and forth levitating fabrics and tools back and forth with her.

"No no Sweetie Belle! I'm afraid I don't have anything you can help me with!"

"Awwww, but I really want to help!"

"Now Sweetie Belle, please just go find something to do! I really need to concentrate!"

"But you said you wanted me to come home right away today! I gave up meeting Coal in the hospital for this!"

"I'm sorry Sweetie Belle, but I didn't know about these orders until a moment ago!"

"Fine..." Sweetie Belle trotted out of the Boutique and was about to look for Applebloom or Scootaloo; when she realized that there was a shadow cast over her. "Huh?" she turns her head to see Coal. "EEEEEP!" Sweetie Belle jumps back and lands on her back. She stares at Coal with big almost watery eyes.

"Whoa there sweetheart! You must be Sweetie Belle. Now don't be scared. My name is Coal...maybe Applebloom or Scootaloo told you about me?"

Sweetie Belle picked herself off the ground and stared at Coal. "You're Coal!? I had no idea you would be...so tall..."

"Hahaha! I know I'm funny looking, but don't worry I'm completely harmless."

"Harmless unless you try and hurt one of your friends..."

"Oh...you know about that, huh?" Sweetie Belle nods her head. "You don't find me scary because of that...do you? Because you don't need to! I would never hurt you or Rarity or any other good pony!"

"I know...so umm...what are you doing Coal?"

"Ahh well...I was hoping I could talk with Rarity for a bit. I wanted to make sure she was doing alright after the incident."

"She's fine...she is real busy trying to make up for lost time with her orders. She wouldn't let me help any though..." Sweetie Belle rubbed the ground with her hoof a bit, she was looking pretty depressed.

"I see...well I better not bother her. Hmm...do you want to join me in searching for Scootaloo then? The three of us could play together or something..."

"REALLY!?" Sweetie Belle jumped up with a hopeful expression on her face. "No adult is ever willing to play with us!"

"Heheh, they are probably just really busy. I got the afternoon off and have nothing else to do. So yeah, really!" Coal kneels down and puts his back to Sweetie Belle. "Hop on! Let's go search for Scootaloo!"

"Yaaaaaay!" She jumps onto Coal's back giggling. She gives him a big smile and then sticks her hoof out in front of them.

"Onward!"

"Hahahah! You got it Sweetie Belle! Now hold on tight!" Coal starts out slow until Sweetie Belle started yelling 'faster'. He slowly started to pick up speed. The air was starting to sting Sweetie Belle's face they were going so quickly.

"I think the potion Zecora gave me to heal me up also must have given me some kind of boost to energy!" Coal yelled over the wind. "I normally can't run this fast!"

"I hope it isn't temporary! This is really fun!"

Coal with Sweetie Belle on his back made their way through Ponyville in search of their friend. Their first stop was to check with Coco to see if Scootaloo had already gone up to her room. Coco told them no and they went back to their search. Coal decided to run back towards Sweet Apple Acres, and maybe pick up Applebloom for this adventure of theirs. When they arrive, they found Applebloom just now heading down the road.

"Hey Applebloom! Sweetie Belle and I are looking for Scootaloo, so that we can play a bit! Do you want to join us!?"

Applebloom gasped "Do Ah!?" she ran up to Coal and jumped onto his back right next to Sweetie Belle.

"Augh! You're a healthy girl Applebloom! Now where do you think she would be?"

Applebloom and Sweetie Belle hmm'd in contemplation. "Ah know! Maybe we should try the clubhouse!"

"Yeah! That is a good idea Applebloom!"

"To the clubhouse it is! Point the way girls!"

At the same time Sweetie Belle and Applebloom started telling Coal where to go, they didn't know it; but they left a chuckling Big Mac and Applejack in their wake.

After about twenty minutes they burst through some brush arriving at the clubhouse. Coal was starting to lose his breath and decided now is as good a time as any to take a little breather. Thankfully they saw Scootaloo's scooter right outside the clubhouse.

"Hey Scootaloo!" Applebloom hollered "Come on out and let's play!"

"Yeah! I think you'll find we're gonna have a lot of fun today!" Sweetie Belle exclaimed with a

squeak in her voice.

Scotaloo popped her head out of the window and gasped when she saw Coal. She came running down the ramp and jumped straight into Coal's arms!

"Hey Coal! What are you doing here?"

"I ran into Sweetie Belle outside of Rarity's. Rarity is really busy right now, so we decided we would play together! We picked up Applebloom and then headed down here!"

"Yeah! We never get to play with adults!"

"Hahaha! That is what Sweetie Belle said too!"

Coal and the CMC spent the next several hours playing tag (which Coal was failing miserably at), hide and seek (even more miserably), and even took a dip in the lake (which Coal passed on, he played the part of life guard). It was nearly nine now and was time to take the little ones home. They were reluctant at first, but as soon as Coal scooped them up; the heat from his body started putting them to sleep.

Coal made his way back to the farm first and tucked in Applebloom. Big Mac and Applejack just giggled when Coal came in silently dropping off their sleeping little sister. The next stop was at Rarity's. Coal snuck in and placed Sweetie Belle in her bed. He would stop by after dropping off Scootaloo to finally talk with Rarity. After arriving at the inn he was greeted by Coco who smiled knowingly at the sleeping filly in Coal's arms.

He promptly tucked in Scootaloo; kissing her good night. She let out a small yawn before getting more comfortable in her bed. Coal stopped at the front desk to let Coco know that he would have her money for her tomorrow. They said their goodbyes and Coal made his way back to the Boutique.

* * * *

"What a great day! I got to kiss Dashie, I got healed, and I got to meet the princess! And then got to spend the rest of the day playing with the cutest little fillies in the world! I hope Rarity won't be too tired to talk..." I have a nasty habit of thinking of depressing shit when I'm really happy. I know...pretty stupid right?

I give a gentle knock on the front door (why I didn't do that when I brought Sweetie Belle home I have no idea). There was no response, but the door slowly slung open. I was instantly worried that creep was back or something. I quickly, but quietly; went up to Rarity's work room.

She was still working, but slowing down immensely. I'll be honest...she looked like crap. Her mane was tangled and had lost its shimmer. Her eyes had big bags under them and even her

coat looked a little duller. She was yawning every few seconds, but just wouldn't stop.

"Rarity..."

"Eeep! Oh...oh Coal darling! You scared me!"

"I'm sorry Rarity. The front door was open, so I let myself in."

"Don't worry about it darling. I want to thank you for spending the day with Sweetie Belle. It was a big help."

"Oh you knew about that? Hehe! It was my pleasure! She is such a dear."

"That she is, but she can be such a hoof-full!"

"How are you doing Rarity?"

"What? I'm fine Coal...why do you ask?"

"I was worried about you is all. I wasn't sure how you were holding up after the incident."

"Oh...well...I think I'm fine darling. I'm not worried about that colt if that is what you're thinking. I'm just so tired and stressed! I can hardly think straight anymore!"

"Rarity.."

"Yes Coal?"

"Get on your bed."

"Wha...what!?"

"Go lay down on your bed Rarity. I'll be there in a minute."

"C-Coal?"

"Please."

"O-o-okay..."

* * * *

Rarity left the work room with Coal staring off into space. She walked down the hall a short ways

and entered her bedroom. She had no idea what was happening. She was scared Coal was going to take advantage of her. She was unsure of herself that she would be able to stop him; after all he was much bigger than she was. She crawled up onto her bed and started to fret.

"Oh my...I hope he isn't going to...to..." before she could finish Coal walked in.

"Rarity."

"Y-y-yes C-c-coal?"

"Roll onto your stomach please. Face away from me as well."

Rarity's face flushed. She just knew Coal was going to have his way with her. She was so scared, but at the same time very confused. Coal had never been like this before; where was all this coming from? She did as he asked and let out a timid 'meep' when Coal got on the bed as well. He pushed her further to the end of the bed. She could now rest her head on her pillows. She grabbed one and stuck her face into it. She wanted to scream, but was too scared and tired. Coal put his hands on her back and she flinched. She just knew that this was going to be her first, and she started to cry. She wanted it to be special; not like this.

She had almost given up hope when Coal started rubbing her. Her panic started to fade as she realized what was happening. Coal never intended to take her. He was only being forceful in order to get her to stop working and relax. She let out a contented sigh and mentally berated herself for being so stupid. Coal went about much the same techniques he had used the first time, but after having had Zecora's brew; his body temperature was a fair bit higher. His hands almost seemed to glow with heat. This in turn made the massage Rarity received all the more relaxing.

Coal could feel all sorts of new stress points all over her back. He paid special attention to each and every one. After he would finish with one he would immediately start on another. As he worked the shine from Rarity's mane could actually be seen returning. Her coat was returning to its naturally pristine white. This was one thing Coal loved about ponies. He could honestly see the difference his actions were taking. Rarity was already starting to fall asleep.

The last time she had a massage; she wasn't too physically tired. Now on the other hoof, she was exhausted. She didn't want to fall asleep though; she wanted to enjoy this for as long as possible. Her own need eventually won out and she fell into a deep slumber. Coal picked up on this immediately, but didn't stop. He worked her back until he could no longer feel any stress built up inside. He then moved to her legs and finished up there. He considered moving on to her chest, but that felt a little wrong without her consent. He tucked Rarity in the same way he had for the CMC. He planted a small peck on her forehead and wished her sweet dreams before heading back to the farm.

Chapter 29: Time alone with Applejack

"Well that didn't take as long as expected!" I was pretty pleased with myself. Sure I had to be forceful with Rarity, but she understood what I was doing. In hindsight though...I should probably just tell her my intentions at first. I'm glad she knew that I was just going to massage her; that whole situation looked pretty bad at the start. Well, that is hindsight for ya! Always there when it doesn't make a shit for difference!

It only took me about fifteen minutes to get back to the farm. It was a little after ten and I was dead tired. I probably should have taken another bath, but I was just ready to hit the hay. When I get to the farmhouse I see that Applejack is sitting on the front porch in Granny Smith's rocking chair.

"Howdy AJ. Enjoying this nice evening?"

"Yea, but Ah was really waitin' on ya."

"Really? Something you want to talk about?"

"Yeah there is...Coal...Ah was curious about what happened with ya and Scootaloo..."

"Oh~ okay. No worries Applejack. It is actually a pretty simple story. I left late at night from Twilight's the other night. I ran into Scootaloo who had been kicked out of her house. I try to take her back and find a note from her stepmother saying that she either has to give up her friends or she can't come back. She runs off with the note and I chase after her. She reads the note and breaks down. I couldn't take seeing her like that, so I bring her back with me to Twilight's. The next morning I decide that I'm going to take care of her, so I am. That is pretty much it."

"Huh...just like that?"

"Just like that."

"...That is mighty good of ya Coal! Ah'm glad Scootaloo has ya to take care of her!"

"Thanks Applejack. You've taken this decision of mine a lot better than most other ponies. This talk does remind me though. I will need at least a couple of days pay. I need to pay Coco and start setting aside some money for Scootaloo's lunches and dinners. Unfortunately they don't offer those meals at the inn."

"Happy ta' Coal. Ya've earned it! Ah actually went ahead and signed ya up an account at Ponyville bank. If ya want, ya could fill out some paperwork inside and have it set up for ya. Ah'll go git yer pay now."

"Thanks a bunch AJ! You're the best!" I give her a big smile to which she returns.

We walk inside and I sit down and take care of the bank paperwork. It was pretty easy compared to a lot of paperwork I've done. Did you know ponies use bits similarly to RPG games? The bits we see in the show are like copper coins. There are 'bits', 'silver bits' (worth 10 bits), and 'gold bits' (worth 100 bits). Applejack came back with a small pouch that had two gold bits, four silver bits, and seven bits.

"Thank you very much AJ! This will let me pay up Coco a fair amount and I'll be able to have enough left over to make sure Scootaloo is well fed!"

Applejack just looked at me long and hard. "Something the matter AJ?"

"Yer something else, ya know that?"

"Huh?"

"You've been here ah little over a week now, and ya've already decided ta' take care of ah filly in need. Ah'm just wondering how ya can be so hard on yerself and do all these kind things fer others."

"Oh...I take it Dashie told you that I know about the six of you...hearing my rant at the forest."

"SHE DID WHAT!?"

"Shiiiiiiiiit! Are you serious!? Did I just spill the beans!? BUUUUUUUUCK!!!"

"Heheh that is some mouth ya got there!"

"Sorry sorry it's just...darn it! I thought you knew! I really need to stop assuming anything!"

"Don't worry about it sugarcube. Ah won't tell no pony."

"Thanks AJ...I owe you one."

"Oh? hmmm....Ah think...Ah'll take one of those rub downs of yers."

I perked up. "Really? You want one? Well get your keester upstairs and let's do this!"

"Woah there lover boy. It is only ah rub down. Don't be gettin' too excited." Applejack gave me a playful wink.

I caught on and decided to play along. In an over exaggerated voice I go: "Awww really? I was

hoping we could wake up half of Ponyville tonight! Oh well, I'll settle for just making you feel good."

Applejack chuckled a bit at my jokes. "Ah take it yer feeling a lot better Coal. How are yer wounds coming along?"

I give her a coy smirk and take my shirt off. She turns a little red and averts her eyes. "What are ya doin Coal? You do know we were just playin' earlier right?"

"Just look at me AJ. I promise you won't be disappointed."

She slowly turned her head; when she got a good look at my chest and saw no wounds; she nearly yelled out in surprise. "Coal! Yer all better! How did that happen?"

"Zecora brought an extra strong healing potion to the hospital. It hurt like all kinds of hell, but it got the job done. I'm now feeling better than I ever have before!"

"Dash mentioned that, but...Ah didn't think it would be so fast!"

"No kidding...now, am I going to have to beg you in order to get you on your bed?" I gave her a playful nudge.

She giggled a little and decided to stop torturing me. "Fine fine. Rarity told me ah bit about it, but Ah want to see what ah real one of yer massages is like. Rubbin mah leg was nice and all, but not enough ta go on."

Applejack and I went up to her bedroom; she then promptly jumped in and got comfortable. Her bed isn't as big as Rarity's, so I wasn't able to get up there with her.

"I need you to scoot to the end of the bed AJ. My arms are long, but not that long."

"Alrighty Coal. Do Ah need ta' know anythin' bout these massages?"

"What's there to know?"

"Ah don't know! Ya rubbin' mah leg ah while back was as much as Ah've ever had."

"Just relax and trust me." I crack my knuckles. "I got this!"

Applejack just shrugs and rolls onto her belly. Now it is time to get to work! She is a lot more muscular than Rarity, so I spend some time exploring her body structure. Much like her legs; her entire body looks petit, but she has amazing muscle tonnage!

"Wow AJ...you have an amazing body..."

"What are ya doin back there Coal? Yer not doin nothin' weird are ya?"

"No no of course not AJ...I'm just admiring how muscular you are."

"Oh...yeah Ah know it ain't too girly and all. Ah'm not as purty as ponies like Rarity, but it doesn't bother me much..."

"I wouldn't say all that Applejack...you're very pretty."

"Now don't ya go tryin' ta' make me feel better. Ah don't like liars ya know?"

"Hehe, I'm not lying Applejack. You are very beautiful. Honest! I'm not admiring your body to suggest it is a turn off on a mare, but to say it is actually really attractive!"

"Huh? Ah'm not sure what yer sayin' Coal..."

"AJ...don't worry about it. Just know that I'm not lying when I say you're a very pretty mare. Well...pretty isn't the right word. A better word for you would be...stunning."

"Ah come on Coal! Now Ah know yer just givin' me a hard time."

"No I am being completely serious here! Your body is incredibly muscular, but it isn't big bulging muscles like Big Mac, but toned and slender muscles. They are very attractive, so have a little more confidence in it."

"That is nice of ya Coal, but Ah'm not as curvy as the others. Ah know yer just being nice..."

"If you keep doubting me AJ I'm going to prove to you how attractive I think you are, and you won't like it! I admit you aren't shaped as delicately as other mares, but...you don't need to be. You have so many other charms that such a minor thing as being a bit bigger, in a good way, doesn't stick out much if at all."

"Now how would ya go and prove something like that?"

"You don't want to know."

"Ah asked didn't I?"

"You really want to know?"

"Yeah! Ah do!"

"I'm a man Applejack...what does a man have that can never lie?"

"Huh? Well that would be...oh...OH!"

"Yes I think you get it now. I told you it would be weird."

I could feel the heat from Applejack rising as the blood went to her head. "S-should Ah be asking ya ta' stop? Ah...Ah don't want for this ta' be all weird n' stuff..."

"It is too late for that AJ. Just relax and enjoy it. It'll make your day tomorrow a lot easier."

"If ya say so Coal..."

Applejack stopped talking and grabbed her pillow. She shoved her face into it as I started to work a rather knotted area. "Ok AJ...this next part is gonna...kinda hurt. I'm not going to lie to you, but it'll pass quickly; I promise." Applejack nodded her head. I applied multi directional pressure to the knot. I had to really work it in order for it to start loosening up. I could tell AJ was pretty uncomfortable, but that was just all the more reason to finish quickly. I finally got the bad knot taken care of, and decided it was high time for the deep tissue stuff. Applejack being thicker than Rarity was a fair bigger challenge. I had to apply a lot more pressure in order to have the same results, but it was worth it. Applejack was 'oing' and 'aaaahing'. It did my heart good to know I was making her feel better. After a good hour's worth of a massage, I finally finished up. She was as loose as I could get her.

"Th-thank you Coal...that was...amazing..."

"Hehe, glad you liked it AJ"

Applejack was so relaxed that she rolled over onto her back. She stretched out trying to wake herself up a bit, but ended up putting me in an awkward position. If you think of the top of Applejack's head as north, then I was south. She rolls over and stretches out, and I find myself with an eye full of...well I don't think I even need to say it. Applejack didn't even seem to notice what she had accidentally done.

"A-a-a-a-a-J-j-j-j-j-ay"

"Huh? Coal? What's a' matter with ya?" Applejack leaned up and saw me staring at her. I had a hand over my eyes, but had moved a finger so I could look. Even through my hands she could tell I was really really REALLY red. "Now what in tar nation has gotten ya so worke..." Applejack followed my eyes and realized where I was looking. She quickly rolled back over and climbed under her covers.

"Git out..."

"A-Applejack, please wait...I didn't mea.."

"GIT OUT!"

"I-I'm sorry AJ...I...I'm so very sorry." I got up and was about to leave when I heard Applejack say something.

"W-wait...Come back in here Coal...close the door."

I did as she told and took a seat on the floor beside her bed. She stuck her face out and looked at me.

"Why didn't ya look away Coal?"

I hung my head. "I won't lie to you AJ...I liked what I saw."

"You did huh?"

"Y-yes...I'm so very sorry Applejack. That was so unbelievably rude of me. I hate myself AJ, but that is who I am. I see something beautiful...and I just can't look away."

"Ya thought it was beautiful? It's just like any other mare's ya know?"

"Yes it was beautiful. It was yours...and you're beautiful. I...I couldn't help myself. It is a lame excuse; I'm sorry, but it is the truth. It doesn't matter if all mares have them; it was yours...and I wanted to see it."

"C-coal...that...that is pretty perverted ya know?"

"I know...I-I have an excuse though. I'll tell you about it, but only you!...if you like."

"Do ya think it'll help us any?"

"It is worth a shot...I've rarely confessed to anything what I'm about to tell you AJ. I hope you know how much I trust you by telling you this. *sigh* Even if it doesn't help you understand...I hope it'll help you forgive me."

"Ah want ta' hear it Coal."

sigh "Ok Applejack...the deal is...is that I've basically been a pervert since I was Applebloom's age. Which in terms of pony....is closer to maybe three or four years old."

"Wh-what? What in Equestria are ya talkin' about?"

"When I was seven years old...I was introduced to what we call pornography..."

"Oh mai...at seven? Ah'm sorry Coal..."

"I can't believe you know what porn is! J-just forget it...let me finish my story."

"O-okay" Applejack pulled the covers over her face a little more. I think she was starting to feel bad having me do this.

"Well...like I said. I was seven, and that is like a foal being three or four...when I was introduced to porn. I had easy access to the stuff and basically spent my entire life looking at it from then on. I've seen everything that humans have to offer. So now when I see something that strikes me as beautiful...I have to look at it. I just can't help it! I've see the most beautiful women my world has to offer, and they don't hold a candle to any pony here. They don't hold a third of a candle to you though AJ...you're...you're very special to me. I-I just...I don't know...I just really liked seeing what I did. I'm sorry that I upset you. That is why I didn't look away...I'll leave now." I was to get back up off the floor when Applejack reached out and put her hoof on my shoulder.

"Ya don't need ta' leave just yet Coal...Ah know how hard ya take it when stuff like this happens. Ah don't want ya out there being mad at yerself or nuttin'. Coal...Ah can't say Ah'm happy ta' be seen like that, but Ah'm not mad at ya! Ah just didn't know how ta' react is all..."

"Thank you AJ...you are so amazing...thank you."

"W-what do we do now Coal? Ya kinda confessed yer feelings fer me ya know?"

"Yeah...I know, but don't worry AJ. I know you don't think of me as anything more than a friend. I won't pursue these feelings. I also won't tell any pony about what happened here. You have my word. I hope all this stress didn't undue that massage..."

"N-No...Ah still feel great...C-coal Ah...nuttin'. Ya have ah good night Coal. Ah'll see ya in the mornin'."

"Good night AJ...sleep well."

* * * *

Author's note: New episode was 'So Awesome!'

Chapter 30: Trouble in Paradise

The night was not pleasant for Applejack. She tossed and turned, but just couldn't get to sleep. All she could think about was her talk with Coal. How he said he thought she was 'beautiful' or how he admitted that he liked looking at her. She admired his honesty; even if it was a bit blunt at times. Thankfully though, sleep did manage to take hold.

The next morning was just as unpleasant. Applejack looks at the clock to find she has overslept by several hours. She runs downstairs to find Coal sitting at the table going over some papers.

"Hey AJ, I take it you slept well."

"Naw Ah didn't! Ah slept too long! Big Mac has got ta' be so mad at me!.."

"Relax AJ! I did your morning chores for you. I've only been sitting her for about twenty minutes."

"Ya...ya what?"

"I felt bad for last night. I know how honest you are, and I knew that what I said got to you. So I got up early and did your chores for you. Big Mac didn't really mind, and Applebloom already left for school. You don't have to worry about work today AJ. I'll do the afternoon stuff too. Why don't you take the day off and give some thought to forgiving me."

"C-coal...Ah already forgave ya...ya didn't need ta' do all that..."

"I wanted to AJ...you're too important to me to take any chances with losing you."

Applejack stood there unsure of what to say. She knew what she wanted to say, but it wouldn't come out right. So she did the only thing she could. She gave Coal a smile and went on her way.

"Ah get a day off huh? Wonder what there is ta' do..." Applejack was walking through the market place. There were ponies at stalls and carts yelling at ponies that walked past. Applejack stopped at a cart selling simple loli-pops. They were only a bit, and she hadn't treated herself in a while. She bought a cherry one and decided to pay Dash a visit. If any pony could keep AJ entertained; it was Dash.

Applejack found the speedy pony practicing tricks over Ponyville park south-east. It was the one closest to the forest.

"Howdy Dash! What are ya up to?"

"Oh...hey AJ! I'm just practicing some new tricks! What are you doing so far from the farm? I

figured you would be busy all day!"

"Naw...Coal gave me the day off."

"Huh? I thought you were his boss."

"Hehe...yeah me too. He got up early today and did mah chores for me. He said he would do the afternoon ones too. So Ah'm not really needed today."

"Well that was nice of him. I wonder why he would do that though. It isn't like Coal hasn't been doing much work lately himself..."

"Well um...can I tell ya something Dash? Yer mah best friend and...Ah don't think Ah could tell any pony but you.."

"Whoa...what has got you all freaked out?"

Applejack then tells Dash about all that happened last night. Dash was too stunned to say anything, but after it was all over she finally found her words.

"THAT JERK! I THOUGHT I WAS SPECIAL TO HIM!"

"W-what?"

"I kissed him while he was still in the hospital! I was going to ask him to hang out today, but now that isn't happening!"

"Y-ya kissed him? Ah didn't know there was anything between the both of ya..."

"I guess there wasn't! If he was able to justify doing all that last night..."

"Yer right...WHAT AH JERK!"

"I know right! I want to give him a piece of my mind!"

"Well Ah ain't gonna stop ya! Ya know what!? Ah think we both need ta' give him a piece of our minds! Ah can't believe Ah was gonna ask him out!"

"You were what!?"

"Err Ah uhh mean....forget it! Let's just go git him!"

* * * *

Author's notes: Sorry for the super short chapter, but the next one will make up for it. :D

[Chapters 31-60](#)